Corso di Laurea magistrale
in Lingue e letterature europee, americane e postcoloniali

Tesi di Laurea

The Language of *Emaré*
A Middle English Romance

Relatore
Ch.ma Prof.ssa Silvana Cattaneo

Correlatore
Ch.ma Prof.ssa Michela Vanon

Laureanda
Laura De Florio
Matricola 817576

Anno Accademico
2011 / 2012
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>LME</th>
<th>LModE</th>
<th>LOE</th>
<th>StE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>absol.</td>
<td>absolute</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>adj.</td>
<td>adjective</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>adv.</td>
<td>adverb</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AmE</td>
<td>American English</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arch.</td>
<td>archaic</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c.</td>
<td>century/centuries</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ca.</td>
<td>circa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>conj.</td>
<td>conjunction</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dial.</td>
<td>dialectal</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EME</td>
<td>Early Middle English</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EModE</td>
<td>Early Modern English</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EOE</td>
<td>Early Old English</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>exc.</td>
<td>except</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>form.</td>
<td>formal</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>int.</td>
<td>interjection</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ME</td>
<td>Middle English</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ModE</td>
<td>Modern English</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MS</td>
<td>manuscript</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MSS</td>
<td>manuscripts</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l.</td>
<td>line</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lit.</td>
<td>literary</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ll.</td>
<td>lines</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l.</td>
<td>line</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p.</td>
<td>page</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pers.</td>
<td>person</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plur.</td>
<td>plural</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poet.</td>
<td>poetical</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pp.</td>
<td>pages</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pret.</td>
<td>preterite</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pron.</td>
<td>pronoun</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reg.</td>
<td>regional</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rel.</td>
<td>relative</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sing.</td>
<td>singular</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v.</td>
<td>verb</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Abbreviations:
- absol.: absolute
- adj.: adjective
- adv.: adverb
- AmE: American English
- arch.: archaic
- c.: century/centuries
- ca.: circa
- conj.: conjunction
- dial.: dialectal
- EME: Early Middle English
- EModE: Early Modern English
- EOE: Early Old English
- exc.: except
- form.: formal
- int.: interjection
- ME: Middle English
- ModE: Modern English
- MS: manuscript
- MSS: manuscripts
- l.: line
- lit.: literary
- II.: lines
- LME: Late Middle English
- LOE: Late Old English
- OE: Old English
- OF: Old French
- pp.: pages
- pret.: preterite
- pron.: pronoun
- reg.: regional
- rel.: relative
- sing.: singular
- v.: verb
- StE: Standard English
CHAPTER 1
SOURCES, THEMES AND LITERARY GENRE

1.1. Sources: Manuscript, Literary Precedents

1.1.1. The Manuscript

Emaré exists in only one manuscript, the Cotton Caligula A ii, dating early 15th century and now in the British Museum. The manuscript consists of two paper quartos originally denominated Vespasian D8 and Vespasian D21, which were put together before 1654 and then given the current denomination. According to Rickert, the MS was copied not earlier than 1446 because it contains the poem Nightingale by Lydgate\(^1\) which was with a high degree of certainty written in that year. The date \textit{ad quem} is probably 1460, as there is a chronicle of England in Latin to the end of Henry VI’s reign (1\textsuperscript{st} reign: 31\textsuperscript{st} August 1422 – 4\textsuperscript{th} March 1461) in the same handwriting as the other works. The later additions about Henry VI’s death (21\textsuperscript{st} May 1471) and the reigns of Edward IV (4\textsuperscript{th} March 1461 – 3\textsuperscript{rd} October 1470 and 11\textsuperscript{th} April 1471 – 9\textsuperscript{th} April 1483) and Richard III (26\textsuperscript{th} June 1483 – 22\textsuperscript{nd} August 1485) are clearly in another handwriting.\(^2\) Kaluza instead claims that the MS was written between 1425 and 1450.\(^3\) Emaré stretches through six folios, ff. 71-76 according to the new numbering and 69-74

---


according to the old one. The MS contains nine further metrical narratives, including Thomas Chestre’s *Sir Launfal*.

1.1.2. Synopsis

The romance opens with an invocation to Christ and starts telling the story of Emaré, daughter of emperor Artyus and Erayne. She has no siblings and when her mother prematurely dies, she is sent to live by a governess named Abro, who teaches her good manners and to sew and embroider. For his visit to Emaré’s father, King Tergaunte of Sicily brings a magnificent cloth as a gift. Its story follows, from its origin, through all the events which brought it from the sultan of Babylon to Tergaunte. It took seven years to give the cloth its shape: it is enriched with plenty of precious stones and representations of true lovers are embroidered on each of the four corners. Once Tergaunte has left, Artyus feels he is missing his daughter, calls her back to his palace and falls in love with her. Consequently, he decides to marry her and sends for papal dispensation; he also has the cloth turned into a robe for Emaré. When he expresses his desire to marry her, the young woman, shocked by the incestuous proposal, vehemently refuses. The emperor, enraged, exiles her and she faces her first exposure adrift in the sea. Her robe is placed in the boat with her. After the boat has disappeared beyond the horizon, Artuys repents and orders to go in search of his daughter but she cannot be found. Emaré goes adrift for seven days and arrives on the shores of Galicia where she is rescued by Sir Kadore, the King of Galicia’s steward, who is impressed by the brilliance of the precious stones of the cloth. Sir Kadore is at first frightened by that sight but feels pity for the
conditions in which the young woman is. Emaré conceals her identity by saying that her name is Egaré and is taken to the steward’s castle where she is looked after until she has recovered from the hardships of the sea and is given the task of teaching embroidery to the servants. During a banquet held at Sir Kadore’s castle Emaré wears her robe and the King of Galicia falls in love with her. He decides to marry her but his mother tries to talk him out of it by saying that Emaré is a fiend and that she will not be present at the ceremony. In spite of that, the wedding takes place. Not much later, the King leaves to go in aid of the King of France, who is besieged by the Saracens and the pregnant Emaré is left under Sir Kadore’s protection. When the heir is born, the messenger sent to inform the King stops at the castle of Emaré’s mother-in-law who makes him drunk and destroys the letter he is carrying. She writes another letter to her son saying that his newborn is a devil. Though being devastated by the news, the King writes a message ordering his wife and son to be taken care of in spite of all. On his way back, the messenger stops again at the queen mother’s castle where once again, the letters are substituted, so that Sir Kadore is given the false command of sending Emaré, the baby Segramour and the robe adrift in the sea. He is reluctant but Emaré encourages him not to disregard the wish of his master. After seven days she arrives in Rome and this time she is rescued by Iurdan, a merchant. Again, the gems on the robe scare the rescuer, but he takes Emaré and her baby home, giving them shelter and comfort for the next seven years. When the King of Galicia returns home he cannot find his wife; Sir Kadore shows him the counterfeited letter and he understands what has happened. He is so enraged that he wants to burn his mother alive for her
treachery but eventually he only exiles and dispossesses her of her lands. After seven years the King of Galicia goes to Rome to ask for forgiveness for what he has caused. He is the guest of the merchant who had rescued Emaré. She instructs Segramour on how to receive the King, but though he is impressed by the boy’s manners, he does not recognise his son. Then Emaré tells Segramour to take the King by the hand and tell him to come and talk with her. On hearing her name, the King is overwhelmed with joy and the family is eventually reunited. Emaré’s father also comes to Rome to pay penance and Emaré convinces her husband to go and meet him. Their son joins him and makes himself known by the emperor, asking him to speak with Emaré. The emperor accepts and meets his loving daughter. Subsequently, Segramour will become emperor. The romance ends with a shorter invocation to Christ.

1.1.3. Literary Precedents and the Constance Saga

Emaré partly originates from a folk tale included in the Vita Offæ Primi, in the Vitaæ Duorum Offarum, a 12th or 13th century chronicle credited to St. Alban’s abbacy telling the lives of two Offa kings, one mythical and one historical. Not much is known of both. King Offa of Angeln may have lived in the 4th century in West Anglia and is said to have been married to a Valkyrie, Thrytho; King Offa of Mercia lived in the 8th century and was involved with two women, one of whom, Drida, was exposed to the sea.⁴ Vita Offæ Primi tells of the King of York

⁴ Over the centuries the stories of the two Offas and their wives were matter of much confusion. They were often interchanged because both are connected to a woman, respectively Trytho and Drida, who was exposed, and later married her. Moreover, the fact that Offa Il’s son asked Charlemagne’s daughter Bertha in marriage contributed to even more complicated connections as Bertha is also the name of Charlemagne’s mother, who was unjustly accused and sentenced to death in a forest. As a proof of her
being in love with his own daughter whom is sent to die in the forest and found by Offa who is resolved to marry her, apparently already pregnant. After many years, Offa goes to war to help the Northumbrian King against the Scots but the messenger carrying his message of victory to his wife is drugged in the King of York’s castle and his letter is replaced by his son-in-law with one ordering that the queen and her children must be left to starve and die in the woods. The children undergo the mutilation of their feet and hands but their limbs are later restored by a hermit with whom the queen and the children live until they are found by the wretched Offa. As a sign of gratitude for his restored family, the hermit tells Offa to erect an abbey (St. Albans) in gratitude, which will be built much later by one of Offa’s descendants. Here we find the first instance of the Innocent Persecuted Wife, of the Incestuous Father and of the Forged Letters, which are central themes in Emaré.

The other main source for Emaré is to be found in the Dominican friar Nicholas Trivet’s Chronique Anglo-Normande, 1334-1337, which will also be the source for Gower’s Confessio Amantis and Chaucer’s Man of Law’s Tale. In Trivet’s chronicle we learn of a heroine named Constance, who will later give the name to the entire saga. She is the daughter of the emperor of Rome Tiberius and she is credited with converting to Islam and marrying a heathen death, the executors had to exhibit Bertha’s tongue or heart but she was pitifully spared and managed to be reunited with her family after several trials. See HIBBARD, L. A., Medieval Romance in England, New York, Franklin, 1960, pp. 30-31 and RICKERT, E., The Old English Offa Saga in ALLEN, P. S., CARPENTER, F. I. and von KLENZE, C. (eds.), Modern Philology, Vol. 2, Chicago, Chicago University Press, 1904, pp. 353-354.

The passages of the pregnant woman and of the son-in-law are not further clarified in the sources I have used for this dissertation. Hibbard (1960; p. 24) summarises the plot: “The Vita Offae Primi […] relates that the king of York loves his own daughter, that her executioners abandon her in the forest, that she is found by Offa and that she becomes his wife. After the birth of her children and the lapse of many years, Offa goes to aid the vassal king of Northumbria against the Scots. For Offa’s message of victory his son-in-law substitutes a letter commanding that the queen and her children should be left to die in the woods.”.

Henceforth the name of the heroine will be used to refer to the whole prose text by Trivet.
sultan. But Tiberius’ mother orders the slaughter of all the Christian guests attending Constance’s wedding and the young bride is consequently sent to sea. After reaching Northumbria, she has to face a false accusation of murder which is then proven wrong and at last she marries King Alle of Northumbria. After Constance has given birth to an heir, her mother-in-law writes a letter to Alle stating that her nephew is a devilish creature and then in another counterfeited letter, supposedly of her son, she condemns Constance and the baby to immediate exposure. After being long adrift in the sea, they finally arrive in Rome where the family is reunited. The Incestuous Father is here absent but the Innocent Persecuted Wife and the exposure are this time connected to religious material, in what we can call a didactic tale.

Rickert juxtaposes *Vita Offæ Primi* (α), Trivet’s *Constance* (β) and *Emaré* (γ) to highlight their points in common:

1. The heroine is of royal descent, therefore a princess, in all three versions: in β and γ she is the daughter of an emperor whereas in α of a king⁷; both in α and γ she rejects her father’s unnatural love. She is sentenced to die in the forest in α and left to die in a boat in γ. Both survive.

2. After exposure, the princesses are found and rescued. Some time later, they all become royal wives: in α Offa I is struck by her virtue and beauty and marries her; in β Alle marries her because of her reputation of being beautiful and pious; in γ the King of Galicia is impressed by her courteous and refined manners in serving him and asks her to become his wife.

---

⁷ In *The Old English Offa Saga* Rickert claims that Emaré is the daughter of a king (p. 358) but Artyus is referred to only as “syr” and “emperour”.
3. The three sovereigns set off to fight in a war: in α Offa has already become a father; in β and γ they leave while their wives are pregnant.

4. The messengers carrying the letters of the king’s victory (α) or the child’s birth (β and γ) are drugged and the letters counterfeited. In α the counterfeiter is the heroine’s father who tries to have his daughter killed in the same manner as he had tried before (see the previous paragraph) and orders her and her children’s hands and feet to be cut off, accusing her of being a witch; in β and γ the letters are replaced by the mothers-in-law, who claim that the newborn is a monster (β) or a devil (γ) and order exposure on the sea for both the queen and the child.

5. The queen finds shelter: in α a hermit takes her and her children to live with him for some years and miraculously restores their mutilated limbs; in β the she lives for twelve years in the house of the senator Arsemius where her child is educated; in γ she is rescued by a merchant who gives her and her child shelter for seven years.

6. Eventually the family is reunited: while hunting, in α, the heroine is discovered by Offa I who promises the hermit to build an abbey as a token of gratitude; the King in β and the Emperor in γ seek atonement for what they have done or caused and go to Rome to ask for forgiveness. There they find their wife and son.

Moreover, the legend of Helena of Constantinople, the mother of Constantine the Great (272-337 AD), may have inspired the life in Rome of Constance, who earns a living with needlework. Helena lives a modest and industrious life to support herself and she manages to be reunited with her royal
partner through her child, who draws his father’s attention with his graceful manners and his charm. Another work which could be connected to the *Vita Offæ Primî* and with the Constance saga is *The Wife’s Complaint* which tells of the life in a kind of forest cave of an exiled wife who was separated from her husband by some treacherous kinsmen of his. According to scholars, however, the brevity of the composition (53 ll.) and its fragmentary nature do not make it possible to determine the relation to the saga and therefore it must be considered independent from it, at least until any further reliable evidence emerges.

A direct source for *Emaré* seems to have actually existed and it was most probably a French lost lay called *L’Egarée*. The name may be inferred from l. 1032:

> Men callys ‘playn[t] þe garye.’

The hypotheses concerning the meaning of the word *playn[t]* employed in such a way and position is a matter of discussion. The copyist might not have understood the word ‘lay’ because he probably did not know it meant a precise literary genre. But *playn[t]* may stand for ‘complaint’ intended as a literary composition concerning the lamentation of a woman who is separated from her lover against her will. *The Wife’s Complaint* is an example of the genre, which was popular in 13th century French literature and subsequently in 14th century England. Thus it was erroneously interpreted by the copyist as *playnt* whereas *lay* is what was meant here, as *Emaré* is not actually a *complaint* in its form and

---

8 Part of the *Exeter Book*, late 10th century, a MS containing an extensive anthology of Anglo-Saxon poetry.
content and most likely derives from a French lost lay, as discussed above.\textsuperscript{11} Further evidence for the French origin is to be found in proper names. With the exception of \textit{Trystram} which is rather a northern ME spelling (but the oldest version of this story seems to be French, as stated by Voretzsch)\textsuperscript{12}, all other names are undoubtedly French or French versions of Celtic (e. g. \textit{Kadore} for ‘Cadoc’) and English (\textit{Artyus} for ‘Arthur’) names. The names Emaré and Egaré need a separate explanation. Emaré may derive from French \textit{esmarie} meaning ‘forlorn, troubled’ and Egaré comes from French \textit{esgarée}, meaning ‘outcast’. In her study, Rickert formulates a further hypothesis: the author must not have meant to call the heroine Emaré but \textit{Emeré}, ‘pure, refined as a precious metal, endowed with rare qualities’;\textsuperscript{13} <\textit{a}> instead of <\textit{e}> might have been necessary because Emaré frequently rhymes with Egaré.\textsuperscript{14}

This lost original French lay must have been earlier than the late 13\textsuperscript{th} century French and German versions of the Constance Saga (i.e. \textit{La Manekine, La belle Helene de Constantinople, Mai und Beaflor, Die Königstochter von Frankreich.} See § 1.1.5. for bibliographical information) but not earlier than 1200.\textsuperscript{15}

\textsuperscript{11} RICKERT, E., (1906): p. xxx. See also entry 1029. STORY / 1032. PLAYN ➤ E GARYE / 1035. GLORYE in the explanatory notes section.

\textsuperscript{12} The common source of the poetic versions of \textit{Tristan and Iseult} seems to be the so-called \textit{Ur-Tristan} from the first half of the 12\textsuperscript{th} century and it is supposed to have been in French. See VORETZSCH, C., \textit{Einführung in das Studium der altfranzösischen Literatur im Anschluss an die Einführung in das Studium der altfranzösischen Sprache}, Halle a.S., M. Niemeyer, 1913, p. 365.

\textsuperscript{13} From the character in \textit{La Blonde Esmerée} in \textit{Le Bel Inconnu} by Renaut de Beaujeu, written at the turn of the 12\textsuperscript{th} and 13\textsuperscript{th} century.

\textsuperscript{14} RICKERT, E., (1906): p. xxix.

1.1.3.1. Emaré’s Cloth: Hypotheses on Its Origin and Its Role

Another explanation proving the existence of a lost original is given, according to Rickert, by closely comparing the sequence on the cloth in Emaré (ll. 82-180) and that in Mai und Beaflor, quoted below:

```
ein samit lâzûrblâ
verre brâht ûg Persîâ
der was schöne gehêret
grôg vîg dar an gekêret
von meisterlichen handen.
eë [sic] wurden in allen landen
nie gesehen só richiu kleit,
[...] 
dar obe ein richer mandel
gewohrt von tiurer koste.
manec [sic] edel stein drûf gloste,
die hôher kraft niht wâren vrî.
edele [sic] borton von Arâbî.\(^{16}\)
```

The “lâzûrblâ” could be Emaré “azowr” (l. 113) and Persîâ could easily correspond to Babylone in l.158. Furthermore, in both texts there is a passage stating the inestimable value of the stones sewn on it (the “tiurer koste” of Mai und Beaflor may be the “myche prys” of l. 92) and the uniqueness of the piece (as stated in the words “eë wurden in allen landen nie gesehen só richiu kleit” and “So rych a jwelle ys þer non in alle Crystyante”, ll. 107-108).

This kind of precious embroidered cloths typical of the Middle East was very popular among western kings. In 1191, the then King of Sicily Tancred visited Richard the Lionheart and according to the chronicles of the time, among all kinds of precious gifts, he brought with him some silken fabrics. The presence in the two texts of such accounts of the cloth’s characteristics, which are very similar but not to such an extent to suggest that one was taken from the other,

---

supports the hypothesis that there must have been a common source for them. In addition, some passages in *Emaré* show a degree of abruptness which perhaps points to an unskilled insertion of them from the older text into the more recent one. In the following we have an example of this: the King of Sicily has brought the cloth as a gift to Emaré’s father and, after telling the story of the precious object,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{The Kyng of Cesyle dwelld } & \text{þer,} \\
& \text{As long as hys wylle wer,} \\
\text{Wyth } & \text{þe emperour for to play;} \\
& \text{And when he wolde wende,} \\
\text{He toke hys leue at } & \text{þe hende,} \\
& \text{And wente forth on hys way.} \\
\text{Now remeueth } & \text{þys nobylle kyng.} \\
\text{The emperour aftur hys dowȝtur hadde longyng,} \\
& \text{To speke wyth } \text{þat may.}
\end{align*}
\]

According to Rickert, the word *emperour* in l. 188 must have been added later for the sake of the comprehension of the passage: without it, the correct sequence of characters and events would be much more difficult to grasp.\(^{17}\) It looks as if the author had to compress the source text and this resulted in quite a rough juxtaposition. As a matter of fact, the story and the description of the cloth are about one tenth of the entire poem (98 lines out of a total of 1035) which seems rather disproportionate.

As for the role and meaning attributed to the cloth, different opinions have been formulated, but none of them is convincing. Gough claims that it “is endued with the magical power of compelling love” and that its “spell was transferred to Emare\(^{18}\) when she wore the robe, so that her beauty fascinated

\(^{17}\) RICKERT, E., (1906): p. xxxii, 7.  
\(^{18}\) Gough does never put the accent on the final <e> of Emaré in his works.
Artyus, and the king of Galys”, but he is not being accurate since only the King of Galicia is actually fascinated by Emaré while she is wearing her cloth. Her father instead falls in love with his daughter independently from the garment: only upon his decision to marry her and after he has got a papal dispensation, he has it cut into a robe that subsequently he gives to Emaré as a gift (l. 241 and following). This raises another question: why, if this robe is so precious, does the Emperor leave it to Emaré when she is exiled? Artyus is furious with his daughter after she refuses to marry him and yet he sends her away in the boat with the magnificent robe.¹⁹ This is rather contradictory after all the praise the cloth receives throughout the text (“For glysteryng of þe ryche ston” in l. 100; “‘Sertes, þys ys a fayry, Or ellys a vanyte!' The Kyng of Cysyle answered þan, ‘So ryche a jwelle ys þer non In alle Crystyante.’” in ll. 104-108; “And a glysteryng þyng þer-yn” in l. 350; “þe cloth vpon her shone so bryȝth” in l. 394; “The cloth on her shon so bryght” in l. 439) and may point to the fact that the cloth’s powers are not always seen as benign but also as a threat. Later in the text, Emaré’s mother-in-law first sees her while she is wearing the robe and her reaction is that of warning her son against the girl: the line “‘Sone, þys ys a fende, In þys wordy wede!’” (ll. 446-447) expresses her doubts over such brilliance because it could conceal a dangerous magical threat. So, as soon as she has the chance, she substitutes her son’s letter with the one she has written and sends Emaré and the baby to sea with the robe. So, should the fact that the cloth itself is twice pushed away be intended as a manifestation of its malign character? In fact, Emaré does never personally make the decision to bring the

robe with her but throughout her forced peregrination, it is either a gift or a burden she accepts passively.\textsuperscript{20} We can also assume that if the cloth had had powers, Emaré would have used it to defend herself from the perils of the sea and to oppose her wicked mother-in-law, but this does not happen. Therefore, the text does not confirm the magical powers of the cloth that Gough and Donovan assume it has.\textsuperscript{21} On the contrary, “the narrator quickly rationalizes [the magical aspect], explaining that the effect is due to the glittering of the jewels”.\textsuperscript{22} Mehl claims that the garment is a key factor in the story since it is “an inseparable attribute, like her outward beauty […] symbolic of her inner perfections” and that “her robe is always mentioned whenever her beauty impresses the beholders”.\textsuperscript{23} In his view therefore the cloth is identified with an enhancer of Emaré’s beauty and qualities, a view deriving also from the frequent expressions which underline the otherworldliness and extreme beauty of the protagonist. See for example “She semed non erbely wommon” in l. 245 and such repeated phrases as “wordy vnþur wede” and similar ones (see § 2.3.). Pace Mehl, it is to be noted though that Emaré’s beauty is never made concrete for the reader or the listener with a description of her features. Neither are her inner qualities explicitly attributable to the cloth: her resourcefulness and inner strength are represented by her remarkable sewing skills, a frequent


\textsuperscript{21} “the Emperor weakens on sight of the cloth, now recognisable as magical in its effect, clearly so when it is changed into a robe and given to Emaré to wear. At the time this effect is felt, the Emperor becomes enamoured of his own daughter”, DONOVAN, M. J., Middle English Emare and the Cloth Worthily Wrought, in BENSON, L. D. (ed.), The Learned and the Lewed: Studies in Chaucer and Medieval Literature, Cambridge, Harvard University Press, 1974, p. 341.

\textsuperscript{22} HOPKINS, A., (2000): p. 73.

matter of praise among her two rescuers, which are independent from embroidering and turning the cloth into a garment. And, most importantly, in the text it is specifically her activity of seamstress and her courtly manners which guarantee for her nobility, not the robe.

Finally, we can conclude that the function of the cloth is confused and it blursthe perception of the role of the heroine in the story: it is neither clearly connected with supernatural powers nor the source of Emaré’s qualities, which are solely hers, in no way conferred on her by any magical object and which make her the enduring, faithful heroine of the story.

1.1.4. Date and Author

Both Gough and Rickert underline that the frequent allusions to minstrels in the poem (6 in total: in ll. 13, 132, 319, 388, 468, 867) most certainly indicate that the author was a minstrel, itinerant and uneducated. As for the date, Gough claims that *Emaré* was written approximately in the same period as four other romances showing the same metre (see § 2.3. below), therefore after 1300 and before 1350. He explains that, considering the evidence of a second hand working on the text, many archaisms and northern forms might have been lost. On the other hand, Rickert moves the date *a quo* to 1350, claiming that “the -e as a factor in the verse has almost disappeared”\(^{24}\) and collocates the *ad quem* limit to 1400, saying that the absence of archaisms points to a post-Chaucerian date.\(^{25}\)

---

1.1.5. Further Versions of the Constance Saga

Gough traces the roots of the saga to a nature myth where the heroine is a supernatural being (she has traits of a Valkyrie or a swan-maiden, respectively the Old Germanic and the medieval counterparts of the same female mythical figure), who comes into the human world at the beginning of spring to bring back warmth and splendour to nature after the deadly winter months she spent in the underworld. The death of her mother, her exposures, the alternation between her incredible beauty and her being almost dead from starvation in a boat and the hardships she has to endure are the price for the rebirth of nature in the warm months. By putting together the common sequences found in comparing the versions of the Constance Saga, he summarises the underlying tale as follows:

“A prince whose wife is dead desires to marry his daughter. On her refusal, her hands are cut off, and she flees with treasure to a foreign land. A young king hunting in a forest finds her, and marries her. During his absence in the wars she bears him a son (or two children). A traitor (generally her mother-in-law) forges a letter to the husband saying that the queen has borne a monster, and also, seeing that this produces no effect, forges a reply ordering the mother and child to be exposed or burnt. They are banished (in many versions, put in the sea), and protected in their exile by a stranger. The queen's hands are restored. The husband on his return discovers the treachery, and burns the traitor. He ultimately rejoins his lost family. (Afterwards the heroine is reconciled to her repentant father).” (GOUGH, A. B., (1900): p. ii).

In continental Europe we find a total of eighteen versions of the tale. Five versions are French: La Manekine, ca. 1270, by Philippe de Remi, a metrical romance; La Contesse d'Anjou, 1313-1316, by Jehan Maillart, a dit (a poetic narrative meant to be spoken); La belle Helene de Constantinople, late 13th century, an unpublished uncredited romance; Columpnarium, 15th century, an
unpublished uncredited play; *De Alixandre, Roy de Hongrie, qui voulut espouser sa fille*, found in a 15th century manuscript, an uncredited story. Three are German: *Mai und Beaflor*, ca.1260, an uncredited metrical romance; *Die Königstochter von Frankreich* ca. 1277-1300, by Jansen Eninkel, a versified tale (a prose version is also extant); *Die Königstochter von Frankreich*, ca. 1401, by Hans von Bühel, a metrical romance. Three versions are known in Spain: *Historia del Rey de Hungria*, late 14th century, an anonymous Catalan tale; an untitled tale in the prose chronicle *Le Victorial*, ca. 1400, by Guitierre Diez de Games; *La Istoria de la Filla de l’Emperador Contasti* [sic], ca. 15th century, Catalan story. Italy was a fertile ground for this tale with its seven versions stretching from the 14th to the 17th century: *Ystorìa Regis Franchorum et Filie in qua Adulterium Comitere Voluit*, 1370, an anonymous Latin prose; *Dionigia*, 1378, by Fiorentino, a novella; *Novella della Figlia del Re di Dacia*, late 14th century, anonymous; *Historia de la Regina Oliva*, ca. 1400, a romance in ottava rima, later the basis of a play, *La Rappresentazione di Santa Uliva; Miraculi de la Gloriosa Verzene Maria*, 1475, a prose tale; *De Origine inter Gallos et Britannos Belli Historia* by Bartolomeo Fazio, written before 1457, a Latin prose in chronicle style; *La Penta Manomozza* by Basile, written before 1637, a novella.

What has been preserved and what has been left out throughout the centuries? The final reward for the heroine’s faith, patience and endurance made the tale suitable for transformation into a Christian legend (see for instance the Italian *Santa Uliva* or the *Gloriosa Verzene Maria*) or more generally, a tale with a didactic purpose, therefore the most violent and crude
segments of the story such as the burning or mutilation of a woman remain only in a few cases.\textsuperscript{26} When violence is censored, humanity, admiration of beauty and piety take its place as for example in our \textit{Emaré}, where the grace and the stunning, almost unearthly beauty of the protagonist are constantly underlined and there are stanzas thick with prayers and invocations to God.

\section*{1.2. Literary Genre: the Romance and the Breton Lay}

\subsection*{1.2.1. The Romance}

The term ‘romance’ derives from 12\textsuperscript{th} century French \textit{roman}, where it designated a kind of classical narrative composition concerned with history, mostly rhymed and set in faraway lands. In 13\textsuperscript{th} and 14\textsuperscript{th} century England, romance authors took inspiration from French \textit{romans}, sometimes merely translating them into English, but tending to place their stories in the contemporary world of their homeland. The themes evolved from the feats of heroic knights, battles and wars to the genteel manners of the court. The presence of a courteous and courageous heroine (instead of a male hero) involved in fanciful and sometimes unreal plots was a growing tendency, possibly due to the fact that after the Norman Conquest a long period of peace followed and such varied themes were more suitable to the historical moment than the previous ones. Romances were, sometimes explicitly, meant to be read or sung in front of an audience, as it is testified in some texts including our \textit{Emaré} (l. 24 “As I here synge in songe”), and most importantly, they were in the

\textsuperscript{26} In \textit{Constance}, \textit{La belle Helene de Costantinople}, \textit{La Manekine}, \textit{Die Königstochter von Frankreich}, \textit{La Penta Manomozza} and \textit{Historia de la Regina Oliva}.
form of rhyming stanzas or couplets, with their pulsating and regular rhythm, the 
most suitable form for a minstrel poem. As said above, the sources were 
French, imported through the Normans, who, when they settled in France, let go 
of most of their original stories and made French literary trends their own. When 
they conquered England, they brought this material with them and French styles 
and sources started to intermingle with local ones, giving birth to the English 
metrical romances as we know them.27

1.2.2. The Breton Lay

A particular kind of this literary genre are the romances of “trial and faith”28, 
connected with hagiography. According to Woolf, the resemblance between 
Christian martyrs and romance heroines, women who endure poverty and 
sufferings which have been imposed on them and finally get back what they 
were deprived of, is striking.29 Emaré is one of the three romances of “trial and 
faith”30 which is defined by its author a “Breton lay”.31 This particular form of 
romance also originated in France, mostly from the work of a 12th century poet, 
Marie de France, about whom not much is known.32 Although the fact of being a

30 Hibbard groups Middle English romances into three types: romances of “love and adventure”, romances 
of “legendary English heroes” and romances of “trial and faith”. See HIBBARD, L. A., (1960) and MILLS, 
31 L. 1030 in Emaré; “Thys ys on of Brytayne layes”. The others are Erf of Toulous (end of 14th century) 
and Sir Gowther (15th century).
32 She is the author of twelve lays which are thought to have defined the genre. She wrote in Anglo-
Norman and was active between 1167 and 1184. See LASKAYA, A. and SALISBURY, E., (1995): p. 1 and 
ZESMER, D. M., Guide to English Literature, From Beowulf through Chaucer and Medieval Drama, 
Breton lay is not explicitly expressed in them, there are four further romances\textsuperscript{33} which presumably are Breton lays because they share the common defining characters of the genre: brevity (500 to 1200 lines); suitability to musical accompaniment; resemblance to what is told in the first 22 lines of \textit{Sir Orfeo}:

\begin{verbatim}
We redeth oft and findeth y-write,
And this clerkes wele it wite,
Layes that ben in harping
Ben y-founde of ferli thing:
Sum bethe of wer and sum of wo,
And sum of joie and mirthe also,
And sum of trecherie and of gile,
Of old aventours that fel while;
And sum of bourdes and ribaudy,
And mani ther beth of fairy,
Of al things that men seth,
Mest o love, forsothe, they beth.
In Breteyne this layes were wrought,
First y-founde and forth y-brought,
Of aventours that fel bi dayes,
Wherof Bretouns maked her layes.
When kingses might ovr y-here
Of ani mervailes that ther were,
Thai token an harp in gle and game
And maked a lay and gaf it name.
Now of this aventours that weren y-falle
Y can tel sum, ac nought alle.\textsuperscript{34}
\end{verbatim}

As a matter of fact, the reason of the denomination Breton is not clear and some scholars, Zesmer for example, claim that “a romance becomes a Breton lay for no better reason than it contains a reference to Brittany or that the poet says it is a Breton lay”.\textsuperscript{35} Brittany, however, has a key role in defining such genre, as it is known that in that northern French region and in neighbouring Normandy, the Armorican Celts were much appreciated for their musical tales. Breton storytellers were often, if not always, bilingual, therefore they must have

\textsuperscript{33} \textit{Sir Orfeo} (late 13th or early 14th century), \textit{Lai le Freine} (early 14th century), \textit{Launfal} (late 14\textsuperscript{th} century), Chaucer's \textit{Franklin's Tale} (end of 14\textsuperscript{th} century).
\textsuperscript{34} \textit{Sir Orfeo} is included in LASKAYA, A. and SALISBURY, E., (1995).
been the means of diffusion of ancient mythological Celtic tales and sagas through French in English literature. Moreover, the origin of the word *lai* for insular Celts meant “a short musical composition or song, probably played on a harp-like instrument to accompany the telling of a tale”.36

All the English Breton lays share some patterns: the suffering of the hero or heroine because of an unjust accusation, a separation and final compensation and recognition, conveying a message which possibly means that ‘the more you unjustly suffer, the greater will be your joy eventually’.

What seems certain from a study of the lays (but also of metrical romances in general) is the process through which they took on the shape in which we know them. As stated above, they were meant to be sung or even recited before an audience and, prior to being written down, there must have been a continuous and incessant rehandling of the story which did not necessarily lead to an improvement of the text. On the contrary, it is more plausible that the written text is a much less refined and creative version of its oral ancestor. Redaction was almost exclusively an oral process which of course involved also what we would today call translation (in this case, from French originals into English), but which included a degree of modification of the original text, a much different process from our idea of translating.37

CHAPTER 2
THE LANGUAGE OF EMARÉ

2.1. Orthography

In *Emaré*, final -e is used extensively but apparently without any particular function and cannot be attributed with sufficient certainty either to the scribe or the author (see l. 349 *A boot he fond by pe brym* and l. 694 *A bote he fonde by pe brymme*). As for the other symbols which deserve an explanation, Rickert says that in her re-edition of the work, she has retained <g, h, n, ſ, r> since she was unable to explain the principle behind their usage. She clarifies that often their usage is meaningless; the curl on <r> is most likely merely ornamental and as for the other consonants above, the variety of the possible expansions made the elaboration of a rule for their general usage impossible, and this is the reason why I decided not to include them in the text. As for <þ>, it expressed both /θ/ and /ð/, because in the 13th c. <ð> died out in favour of <þ>, a consonant borrowed from the runic alphabet. In OE <ʒ> stood for /g/, /x/ and /j/. It was only in the 12th c. that <g> was introduced through Franco-Latin influence to express /g/ and /ʤ/. Consequently, <ʒ> was left to represent /x/ (l. 320 *myʒth*, l. 326 *nyʒth*, l. 347 *knʒtus*, etc.) and also /j/, later <y> (l. 20 *ʒou*, l. 516 *ʒode*, l. 569 *ʒynge*, etc.). As for <u> and <v>, the former was used for both [u, v] medially (l. 11 *heuen*, l. 14 *every*, l. 43 *lyue*, l. 70 *leue*, l. 118 *seuen*, l. 429

---

38 The edition of the romance used for this dissertation is Edith Rickert’s, 1906, based on the MS. All the symbols we find in ME manuscripts are supposed to be pronounced, so every single letter corresponds to an actual sound in the spoken language of the time, except for final <e> in substantives and adjectives, which, according to scholars, was already silent in late Middle English. Final <e> was therefore employed only for metrical reasons to show that the radical vowel was long and therefore it turned into a very useful tool in versification.

haue, l. 715 craue, l. 814 lyued, etc.) and the latter initially (l. 4 vs, l. 62 vseden, l. 98 per-vpone, l. 105 vanyte, l. 152 vertues, l. 198 vnbur, l.548 vnburstonde, l. 794 vnhenende, etc.). As a result of French influence, in ME <z> was introduced for [z] (l. 91 topace, l. 482 Sarezyne): earlier there was no voice contrast between [s] and [z] which were both expressed with <s>. Another consequence of French influence was the use of <ou/ow> to express /u:/, (see l. 25. emperour, l. 26 towre, l. 42 kowth, l. 109. dowȝter, l. 339. countre, etc.) leaving <u> to /u/ and to /y(:)/ in those dialects where it did not undergo unrounding. After OE /y/ was unrounded in non-western dialects (see 1. iii. KYNG) and merged with /i/, <y> started to be used as an equivalent of <i> (in the text there is an extensive use of <y> in place of <i>, which appears 16 times less than its counterpart). Scribal conventions established that in the presence of <m, n, v, w>, <u> was to be written <o> to avoid confusion. The reason of this habit is the nature of manuscript writing: these letters required a sequence of unligatured verticals, very similar to a sequence of four or more <i>, which made the comprehension of the word sometimes tricky (see l. 158 sonne <sunu, l. 232 come <cuman).40

In many ME texts spelling is very changeable and Emaré is no exception. We find a wide variety of spellings for the same word: ‘daughter’ is dowȝter, dowhter, dowȝtur, dowȝyr, powȝtur, ‘there’ is þore, þer, there, thore, ther, ‘again’ is aȝeyn, a-gayn, a-gayne, and so on. As for proper nouns, which normally show more consistency in spelling than common words, they also

come in different versions: ‘Emaré’ is *Emare* and *Emarye*; ‘Egaré’ is *Egare* and *Egarye*, ‘Segramour’ is *Segramour* and *Segramowre*.

### 2.2. Language: Dialect, Verbs, Inflections

Sources tend to place *Emaré* in the East Midlands with a distinct northern connotation. According to Rickert, the northern character of the text is traceable in the following features: -n is dropped in most of the infinitives (l. 59 to sewe, l. 93 to se, l. 120 to hyde, ll. 135 and 141 to se, l. 183 to play, l. 227 to worche, l. 249 to be-holde, l. 305 to seke, l. 312 to telle, l. 321 to go, l. 322 to wawe, l. 356 to se, l. 357 to dye, l. 376 to sewe, l. 471 to se, ll. 603 and 622 to rede, l. 661 to wepe, l. 667 to warye, l. 689 to playe, l. 690 to tane, l. 713 to brynge, l. 727 to bryfe, l. 758 to blame, l. 769 to rede, l. 822 to take, l. 825 to make, l. 842 to come, l. 939 to folde, l. 942 to be-holde, l. 957 to wynne, l. 996 to hyde, l. 1014 to loke, l. 1034 to wonne) and retained only five times (l. 4 to done, l. 423 to sene, l. 426 to bene, l. 486 to sene, l. 827 to wynnen); the retention of -n in past participles such as *done* (ll. 469 and 856), *sene* (l. 429), *for-lorne* (l. 255), *borne* (ll. 49, 258, 503, 520), *gone* (l. 696). It is lost in *be* (ll. 364 and 718), *woxen* (l. 950), in *holde* (l. 1027) and in *helde* (l. 225). The northern character of the text can be more effectively grounded on Rickert’s analysis of the vocabulary. In *Emaré* there are 40 dialectal or rare forms used in *Emaré*, 20 of which can be found in Yorkshire glossaries of the 14th and of the 15th century and in a number varying between seven and twelve in the Durham, North and West Lincolnshire, Lake District and Lancashire lists.
More convincing are the features common to the Midlands and Northern dialects, that is the alternation between a and o of OE long a in *fome* <fam, *home* <ham, *oon* <an, *lore* <lar, *gare* <gara, *sore* <sar, *more* <mara, *a-lone* <al-an; the presence of the adverbial ending -ly, -lye due to Scandinavian influence; the extensive use of <y> from OE <ü> (see above).\(^{41}\)

On the other hand, in a previous study Gough claims that establishing whether the dialect is West or East Midlands is not easy. In spite of that, he lists a number of features which tend to place the work in the East Midlands rather than anywhere else, as for instance the large number of words of Scandinavian origin (l. 657 *pappes* ‘nipples’, l. 915 *myn* ‘less, smaller’, l. 954 *skynne* ‘skin’). He also excludes the South because of the lack of distinct and consistent southern features, except for initial -y in past participles, which, however, occurs only twice for the sake of the rhyme (l. 520 *y-borne* and l. 395 *y-dygth*). Rickert agrees with Gough on the northern character of the dialect. He supports his hypothesis with the loss of final -n in the infinitive, the northern form *ȝynge* for OE *geong*, the contraction of the infinitive *tane* or *tone* instead of *tacan*, *taken* and the use of e for a in *wes*, *cleddde*, *kelle* (respectively ll. 463, 525, 303). The work can therefore be located in the north East Midlands with a good degree of certainty.\(^{42}\)

As stated above, the infinitive of verbs shows a clear tendency to lose final -n. There are no verbs in the present indicative singular and in the plural most end in -e but there are also a few instances of the old -en ending (l. 13  

---


\(^{42}\) **GOUGH, A. B., (1900): p. 11.**
walken). Also in the preterite plural there are two instances of the -en ending (l. 124 loueden, l. 218 seten).

Most plurals show one of the following endings: -s, -es, -ys, -us. The last (see l. 4 dedus, l. 151 knyȝtus, ll. 445 and 546 wordus, l. 823 shypus) is labelled as a typical northern West Midlands feature.43 Ȳȝen in l. 298 is the only instance of a plural in -n; the plurals which show no inflection are OE plurals used archaically, possibly because of rhyming necessities: honde ‘hands’ in l. 639 rhymes with londe, sonde, wronge respectively in ll. 642, 645 and 648; yere ‘years’ in l. 816 rhymes with dere, clere, chere respectively in ll. 807, 810, 813; ston ‘stones’ in l. 100 with non in l. 101; styg ‘paths’ in l. 196 with melodye, hye, lady respectively in ll. 193, 194, 197; street ‘streets’ in l. 543 with swete, lete, blede respectively in ll. 546, 549, 552, etc.. Of particular interest is the use of fote ‘feet’ in l. 1017: Rickert claims that it is a “survival of the old dative plural fotum”,44 whereas Zupitza suggests that this plural form is used in ME when following a preposition like at, on, to. As for byng, it appears in the old endingless plural 9 times in yn all byng on ll. 40, 64, 568, 712, 724, 964, 976; in all maner of thynge on l. 75; in most of all byng on l. 762. This usage is typical in works as late as Chaucer.45

In the MS the genitive is spelt -es, -us, -ys but it occurs also without inflection in the following expressions: l. 6 heuen lyghte, l. 7 heuyn qwene—which however can be intended as compounds as well—, l. 109 the amerayle dowȝter, l. 158 pe sowdan sonne, l. 170 pe sowdan sone, l. 576 pe kyngus

modur castelle, l. 974 be emperour komynge. Gough underlines that this modality is common in ME texts, in particular with proper names and titles, also in compound form. ⁴⁶

2.3. Rhyme, Metre, Repetition and Alliteration.

The stanzas of the poem can be divided roughly into two groups: those according to the aabccbddeeb scheme (1) or variants of it and those following the scheme aabaabcbbdd (2) or variants of the same. The former pattern undergoes alterations in the fourth quatrain which can become most frequently beeb or baab, bccb or bddb, repeating respectively the first or the second or the third couplet. The latter can have bccb or baab in the last cluster. There are different interpretations on the variety of stanza structure used in the romance. Wilda claims that it is the result of the scribe’s misinterpretation of the original rhyme “feeling”, Kölbing suggests that it was done intentionally. ⁴⁷ Kölbing’s hypothesis seem to be excluded by a comparison with the four other romances written in pattern 1 because they present few alterations. Moreover, three of them date much earlier than Emaré and one is written in a different dialect. ⁴⁸ Wilda’s hypothesis could confirm that there were actually two authors involved in the writing but the reason why pattern 1 predominates in a proportion of 2/3 over pattern 2 remains obscure. As Gough shows, in King of Tars the existence

---

of two MSS makes the tracing of the passage from one to the other rhyme pattern justified and quite clear; unfortunately, this is not the case of Emaré, whose MS, however, “bears internal evidence of being a copy”\(^{49}\), thus making the hypothesis of the two authors likely. Furthermore, in pattern 2, where southern vocabulary is prevalent, the southern feature of the past participles in -y can also be found. These features point to a second southern author of a later period.\(^{50}\)

As for rhythm, Rickert defines it “rough”, since short lines could be improved through the insertion of lost <e> and long ones shortened through the deletion of redundant and unnecessary words. Generally, the text seem to depart from a strict iambic composition; more than one fourth of the lines lack the first syllable of the iambic foot and thus start with a stress and, similarly but less frequently, they have two short syllables instead of one; there is sometimes a need for elision of vowels as for instance in l. 72 “And speke we of be_emperour”; the arrangement of stresses is heterogeneous and sometimes turns to OE rhythmical devices.

If the rhythm is not very accurate, alliteration and repetition do play a very important role in the text. Alliteration occurs 323 times, and from a formal point of view it is present in almost every possible combination of words (noun + adjective, noun + noun, adjective + adjective, verb + noun, adjective + noun + verb, etc.), for instance in sentences where two ideas are associated or opposed as in “That made both see and sonde” (l. 18), “The lady þat was both meke and mylde” (l. 478), “Both kyng, knyȝth and clerke” (l. 495), “Bothe yn wo

---


and wele” (l. 573). Alliteration can connect from a minimum of two to a maximum of four words (three words: “To God of heuen she made her mone, And to hys modyr also” ll. 314-315; “To serue her at her wylle, Bothe yn wo and wele.” ll. 572-573, etc.; four words: “Of mykylle myrght y may ȝou telle, And mornynge per a-monge” ll.20-21; “Messengeres dyȝte hem in hye; Wyth myche myrthe and melodye” ll. 193-194; “Certys, þys ys a wykked kase! Wo worth dedes wronge!” ll. 647-648, etc.). As for repetition, it is in my opinion the most relevant feature in the text from a stylistic point of view. If we take a closer look at the style, we will find a great amount of conventional devices which can generally be found in works of this genre. They are useful on the oral level where they help a minstrel to keep the rhythm in his declamation and on the written level, where they are not essential to the story but offer the writer a wide range of rhymes which are versatile and easily adjustable to his rhyming necessities. Some examples of such expressions are: ‘in all things’ in “He was curtays in alle þyng” (l. 40), “She was curtays in alle thynge” (l. 64 and 724), “In alle maner of thynge” (l. 75), “She kowȝpe werke alle maner þyng” (l. 382), “Ther was alle maner þyng” (l. 466), “He commanded yn alle þyng” (l. 568), “And badde hys wyf yn alle þyne” (l. 712), “I loue most of alle þyng” (l. 762), “In no manere þyng” (l. 852), “Swete sone, yn alle þyng” (l. 964 and 976); some other are expressions related to ‘God’: “God forbede þat I hyt so se” (l. 263), “As hyt was Goddys wylle” (l. 327, 500, 675), “Thorow þe grace of Goddes sond” (l. 332, 680, 820, 836, 944), “As God wolde hyt sholde be” (l. 480), “God forbede þat I hyt so se” (l. 251, 263 and 630); expressions connecting opposing ideas as “Bothe to olde and to þynge” (l. 40, 65, 380, 725); moreover, some expressions
reassure the reader or hearer that what is being said is true: “For sothe, as y say þe” (l. 46, 96, 463 and 144), “I say ȝow for certeyne” (l. 131), “In trwe story as y say” (l. 544), “Of mykylle myrght y may ȝou telle” (l. 20); some are mere expletives as “godely vnþur gare” (l. 198 and 938), “wordy vnþur wede” (l. 250, 366, 612, 736 and 988), “comely vnþur kelle”, “semely vnþur serke” and “lufsumme wer vnþur lyne” (respectively ll. 303, 501 and 864). Some lines are exact repetition: “Then þe lordes þat wer grete” (ll. 217, 865 and 889); “Now þe lady dwelled þore” (ll. 274, 325, 673, 721) “That semely ys of syght” or “That semely ys to ȝene” and similar ones (ll. 9, 48, 93, 135, 141, 171, 423, 471, 486); “Both by stretes and by sty”e” (l. 196, 543), etc.. Also entire narrative or descriptive sequences are repeated; for instance the four stanzas describing Emaré’s beautiful cloth are very similar (ll. 121-132, 133-144, 145-156, 157-168); there are four lamentation sequences involving the fainting of the character (ll. 280-300, 547-564, 604-612, 769-783); the sequences regarding the reunions, first of Emaré and her husband and then with her father (ll. 925-936 and 1009-1020). But there is repetition also in Emaré’s two sea-voyages, in the messenger’s two journeys (to his master and back to the castle), in the directions given by Emaré to her son on how to receive his father and then his grandfather upon their arrival. These narrative sequences are also strikingly similar in their style and construction. Rickert says that the first author must have only had a smattering of the original tale since such rate of repetition is not to be found in other versions of the story and that therefore he probably rearranged the details on his own initiative. Compared to Gower’s Confessio

---

51 See § 1.
Amantis and Chaucer’s Man of Law’s Tale (their versions of the Constance Saga: see § 1), Emaré uses by far less words: in particular, compared to Chaucer’s version, Emaré presents one third less words in approximately the same number of lines.\textsuperscript{52} Given this and the previous considerations, a high rate of repetition of single words, in particular adjectives (‘great’ for instance, is repeated forty times), is inevitable.\textsuperscript{53}

As for the syntax, I suppose that the presence of some corrupted lines (when a word has been inserted in a line, it becomes evident from the metre) and abrupt changes of subject did not hinder the comprehension but in a closer analysis of the text as the present one, we find that syntax rules are sometimes literally “challenged”. In the first stanza for example we find an invocation to Jesus offering us an example of this:

\begin{quote}
Ihesu, þat ys kyng in trone, 
As þou shoope boþe sonne and mone, 
And alle þat shalle dele and dyghte, 3  
Now lene vs grace such dedus to done, 
In þy blys þat we may won, 6  
Men calle hyt heuen lyghte; 
And þy modur Mary, heuyn qwene, 9  
Bere our arunde so bytwene, 
That semely ys of syght, 
To þy sone þat ys so fre, 12  
In heuen wyth hym þat we may be, 
That lord ys most of myght.
\end{quote}

Here, relative clauses introduced by \textit{pat} or \textit{that} are placed in such positions that the resulting sentence sounds rather awkward (see ll. 1, 3, 5, 9, 10, 11, 12 above) and there is not a logical relation between subject and verb (as in “And

\textsuperscript{52} Emaré has 802 words in 1035 lines; Confessio Amanti 945 words in 1014 lines; Man of Law’s Tale 1265 words in 1029 lines. See RICKERT, E., p. xxii.
The poem shows a clear tendency to coordination rather than subordination and there are few introductive or transitional expressions between direct and indirect speech. Subjects are mostly used arbitrarily, being often omitted where needed ("She moste haue wyth her no spendyng, No pur mete ne drynke; But shate her yn-to þe se" ll. 271-273; "Then was þe stewardes herte wo, And sayde, ‘Lorde, why sayst þou so?’" ll. 763-764) and repeated where not necessary ("The emperes, þat fayr ladye, Fro her lord gan she dye" ll. 52-53).

All these features point unequivocally to the oral character of the poem, which is also demonstrated by the presence of a large number of imperfect rhymes and assonances, repetition in forms and content. These features must nevertheless have made oral transmission effective and successfully evoked characters and scenes in the mind of the audience.
Taken from RUMBLE, T., (1965): p. 96.
EMARÉ

The following text is taken from RICKERT, E., (1906): pp. 1-32. Rickert clarifies how she treated the text in the MS as follows:

“The present edition aims to give the text as the scribe intended it to be read. Expansions of contracted forms, additions and a few obvious corrections are indicated: expansions by italics; additions in brackets; probable omissions in parentheses. [...] Capitals and punctuation are modern. [...] In a unique MS which bears internal evidence of being a copy, and shows a great mixture of dialects, I have not attempted to restore the text, believing that such a reconstruction must be largely arbitrary. I have departed from recent custom, in expanding ḫ to lle inasmuch as in Emaré there is not a single instance of ll or lle. I have retained the marking of /helper> because I am unable to find any principle governing the usage. In regard to gh, ḫ, the balance of evidence seems to show that the stroke has lost his value, although in a few cases an -e added serves to correct the metre. The marking of ṡ, ḫ, ṡ, if expanded at all, must be rendered sometimes un, nn, mm, sometimes me, ne; but there are also cases in which it must be meaningless. The curl to r seems to be mere ornament.”


In reporting the text in my dissertation, I decided to keep Rickert’s italics, brackets and parentheses and to leave out special characters with the exception of <³> and <³>.54

(1)
Ihesu, þat ys kyng in trone,
As þou shoope boþe sonne and mone,
   And alle þat shalle dele and dyghte,
Now lene vs grace such dedus to done,
In þy blys þat we may wone,
   Men calle hyt heuen lyghte;
And þy modur Mary, heuyn qwene,
Bere our arunde so bytwene,
   That semely ys of syght,
To þy sone þat ys so fre,
In heuen wyth hym þat we may be,
   That lord ys most of myght.  

(2)
Menstrelles þat walken fer and wyde,

54 For further information, see § 2.1..
Her and þer in every a syde.
   In mony a dyuercse londe,
Sholde, at her bygymnyng,
Speke of þat ryghtwes kyng
   That made both see and sonde.
Who-so wyle a stounde dwelle,
Of mykylle myrght y may ȝou telle,
   And mornyng þer a-monge;
Of a lady fayr and fre,
Her name was called Emare,
   As I here synge in songe.

(3)
Her fadyr was an emperour,
Of castelde and of ryche towre,
   Syr Artyus was hys nome;
He hadde boþe hallys and bowrys,
Frythes fayr, forestes wyþ flowrys,
   So gret a lord was none.
Weddedde he had a lady,
That was both fayr and semely,
   Whyte as whales bon e;
Dame Erayne hette þat emperes,
She was full of loue and goodnesse,
   So curtays lady was none.

(4)
Syr Artyus was þe best manne
In þe worlde þat lyuede þanne,
   Both hardy and per-to wyght;
He was curtays in alle þyng,
Bothe to olde and to ȝynge,
   And welle kowth dele and dyght.
He hadde but on chyld in hys lyue,
Be-geten on hys weddedde wyfe,
   And þat was fayr and bryght;
For soþe, as y may telle þe,
They called þat chyld Emare,
   That semely was of syght.

(5)
When she was of her modur born,
She was þe fayrest creature borne,
   That yn þe lond was þoo;
The emperes, þat fayr ladye,
Fro her lord gan she dye,
   Or hyt kowþe speke or goo.
The chyld, pat was fayr and gent,
To a lady was hyt sente,
    That men kalled Abro; 57
She thawth hyt curtesye and thewe,
Golde and sylke for to sewe,
    Amonge maydenes moo. 60

(6)
Abro tawȝte þys mayde smalle,
Nortur þat men vseden in sale,
    Whyle she was in her bowre. 63
She was curtays in alle thynge,
Bothe to olde and to þyne,
    And whythe as lylyo flowre; 66
Of her hondes she was slye,
Alle her loued þa at her sye,
    Wyth menske and mychyl honowr. 69
At þe mayden leue we,
And at þe lady fayr and fre,
    And speke we of þe emperour. 72

(7)
The emperour of gentylle blode,
Was a curteys lorde and a gode,
    In alle maner of thynge. 75
Aftur, when hys wyf was dede,
And ledde hys lyf yn weddewede,
    And myche loued playnge,— 78
Sone aftur, yn a whyle,
The ryche kynge of Cesyle
    To þe emperour gan wende. 81
A ryche present wyth hym he browght,
A cloth þat was wordylye wroght.
    He wellescomed hym as þe hende. 84

(8)
Syr Tergaunte þat nobylle knyȝt (hyȝte),
He presented þe emperour ryght,
    And sette hym on hys kne, 87
Wyth þat cloth rychly dyght,
Fulle of stones þer hyt was pyght,
    As thykke as hyt myght be: 90
Of(f) topaze and rubyes,
And oþur stones of myche prys,
    That semely wer to se; 93
Of crapowtes and nakette,
As thykke ar þey sette,
    For sothe, as y say þe. 96
The cloth was dysplayed sone,
The emperour lokede þer-vpone,
And myght[e] hyt not se; 99
For glysteryng of þe ryche ston
Redy syghte had he non,
And sayde, “How may þys be ?”

The emperour sayde on hygh,
“Sertes, þys ys a fayry,
Or ellys a vanyte!”

The Kyng of Cysyle answered þan,
“So ryche a jwelle ys þer non
In alle Crystyante.”

The amerayle dowþter of heþernes
Made þys cloth wyth-outen lees,
And wrowþte hyt alle wyth pride; 111
And purtreyed hyt wyth gret honour,
Wyth ryche golde and asowr,
And stones on ylke a syde. 114
And, as þe story telles in honde,
The stones þat yn þys cloth stonde,
Sowþte þey wer fulle wyde. 117
Seuen wyuter hyt was yn makynge,
Or hyt was browghte to endynge,
In herte ys not to hyde

In þat on korner made was
Ydoyne and Amadas,
Wyth loue þat was so trewe; 123
For þey loueden hem wyth honour,
Portrayed þey wer wyth trewe-loue-flour,
Of stones bryght of hewe:
Wyth carbunkulle and safere,
Kassydonys and onyx so clere,
Sette in golde newe;
Deamondes and rubyes,
And oþur stones of mychylle pryse,
And menstrellys wyth her gle[we].

In þat oþur corner was dyght,
Trystram and Isowde so bryþt
That semely wer to se;
And for þey loued hem ryght,
As fulle of stones ar þey dyght,  
As thykke as þey may be:       138
Of topase and of rubyes,
And opur stones of myche pryse,
That semely wer to se;       141
Wyth crapawtes and nakette,
Thykke of stones ar þey sette,
For sothe, as y say þe.       144

(13)
In þe thrydde korner, wyth gret honour,
Was Florys and Dam Blawncheflour,
As loue was hem be-twene;       147
For þey loued wyth honour,
Portrayed þey wer wyth trewe-loue-flour,
Wyth stones bryght and shene:
Ther wer knyþus and senatowres,
Emerawdes of gret vertues,
To wyte wyth-outen wene;
Deamoundes and koralle,
Perydotes and crystalle,
And gode garnettes by-twene.       156

(14)
In the fowrthe korner was oon,
Of Babylone þe sowdan soonne,
The amerayles dowȝtyr hym by.
For hys sake þe cloth was wrowght;
She loued hym in hert and thowght,
As testymoyeth þys storie.
The fayr mayden her by-forn
Was portrayed an vnykorn,
Wyth hys horn so hye;
Flowres and bryddes on ylke a syde,
Wyth stones þat wer sowghte wyde,
Stuffed wyth ymagerye.       168

(15)
When the cloth to ende was wrowght,
To þe sowdan sone hyt was browȝt,
That semely was of syȝte.
“My fadyr was a nobylle man,
Of þe sowdan he hyt wan,
Wyth maystreye and wyth myȝth.
For gret loue he þaf hyt me,
I brynge hyt þe in specyalte,
Thys cloth ys rychely dyght.”       177
He þaf hyt þe emperour,
He receyued hyt wyth greth honour,  
And þonkedey hym fayr and ryȝt.  

(16)  
The Kyng of Cesyle dwelled þer,  
As long as hys wylle wer,  
Wyth þe emperour for to play;  
And when he wolde wende,  
He toke hys leue at þe hende,  
And wente forth on hys wyay.  
Now remeueth þys nobylle kyng.  
The emperour aftyr hys dowȝtur hadde longynge,  
To speke wyth þat may.  
Messengeres forth he sent  
Aftyr þe mayde fayr and gent,  
That was bryȝt as someres day.  

(17)  
Messengeres dyȝte hem in hye;  
Wyth myche myrthe and melodye,  
Forth gon þey fare,  
Both by stretes and by sty,  
Aftyr þat fayr lad,  
Was godeyly vnþur gare.  
Her norysse, þat hyȝte Abro,  
Wyth her she goth forth also,  
And wer sette in a chare.  
To þe emperour gan þey[y] go;  
He come aȝeyn hem a myle or two;  
A fayr metyng was there.  

(18)  
The mayden, whyte as lylye flour,  
Lyȝte aȝeyn (her fadyr) þe emperour;  
Two knyȝtes gan her lede.  
Her fadyr, þat was of greth renowne,  
That of golde wered þe crowne,  
Lyȝte of hys stede.  
When þey wer bothe on her fete,  
He klypped her and kyssed her swete,  
And bothe on fote þey ȝede.  
They wer glad and made good chere,  
To þe palys þey ȝede in fere,  
In romans as we rede.  

(19)  
Then þe lordes þat wer grete,  
They wesh and seten don to mete,
And folk hem serued swyde.
The mayden, þat was of sembelant swete,
Byfore her owene fadur sete,
The fayrest wommon on lyfe;
That alle hys hert and alle hys þowȝth,
Her to loue was yn browght;
He by-helde her ofte syȝe.
So he was an-amored hys þowȝtus tylle,
Wyth her he þowȝth to worche hys wylle,
And wedde her to hys wyfe.

(20)
And when þe metewhyle was don,
In-to hys chambur he wente son,
And called hys counseyle nere.
He bad þey shulde sone go and come,
And gete leue of þe Pope of Eome,
To wedde þat mayden clere.
Messengers forth þey wente,
They durste not breke hys commandement,
And erles wyth hem yn fere.
They wente to þe courte of Rome,
And browȝte þe Popus Bullus sone,
To wedde hys dowȝter dere.

(21)
Þen was þe emperour gladde and blyþe,
And lette shape a robe swyþe,
Of þat cloth of golde;
And when hyt was don her vpon,
She semed non erþely wommon,
That marked was of molde.
Then seyde þe emperour so fre,
"Dowȝþyr, y wolle wedde þe,
Thow art so fresh to be-holde."
Then sayde þat wordy vnþur wede,
"Nay, syr, God of heuen hyt for-bede,
Þat euer do so we shulde!"

(22)
Ʒyf hyt so be-tydde þat þe me wedde,
And we shulde play to-gedur in bedde,
Bothe we were for-lorne!
Þe worde shulde sprynge fer and wyde,
In alle þe worlde on euery syde,
Þe worde shulde be borne.
Ʒe ben a lorde of gret pryce,
Lorde, lette neuur such sorow a-ryce,
Take God ȝou be-forne!
That my fadur shulde wedde me,
God forbede þat I hyt so se,
    That wered þe crowne of þorne!"  

(23)
The emperour was ryght wrothe,
And swore many a grete othe,
    That deed shulde she be.
He lette make a nobulle boot,
And dede her þer-yn, God wote,
    In þe robe of nobulle ble.
She moste haue wyth her no spendyng,
Noþur mete ne drynke;
    But shate her yn-to þe se.
Now þe lady dwelled þore,
Wyth-owte anker or ore,
    And þat was gret pyte!

(24)
Ther come a wynd, y vnþurstonde,
And blewe þe boot fro þe londe,
    Of her þey lost þe syght.
The emperour hym be-bowght
That he hadde alle myswrowht,
    And was a sory knyȝte.
And as he stode yn studyynge,
He felle down in sowenynge,
    To þe yrþe was he dyght.
Grete lordes stode þer-by,
And toke v[p] þe emperour hastly,
    And conforted hym fayr and ryght.

(25)
When he of sownyng kouered was,
Sore lie wepte and sayde, "Alas,
    For my dowhter dere!
Alas, þat y was made man!
Wrecched kaytýf þat l hyt am!"
    The teres ronne by hys lere.
"I wrowght a-ȝeyn Goddes lay,
To her þat was so trewe of fay,
    Alas, why ner she here!"
The teres lasshed out of hys þyen;
The grete lordes þat hyt syþen,
    Wepte and made ylle chere.

(26)
Ther was noþur olde ny þynge,
That kowpe stynte of wepynge,
   For þat comely vþur kelle. 303
In-to shypys faste gan þey þrynge,
For to seke þat mayden þynge,
   þat was so fayr of flesh and felle.
They her sowþ ouur-alle yn þe see,
And myȝte not fynde þat lady fre,
   A-ȝeyn þey come fulle snelle. 309
At þe emperor now leue we,
And of þe lady yn þe see,
   I shalle be-gynne to telle. 312
(27)
The lady fleted forth a-lone;
To God of heuuen she made her mone,
   And to hys modyr also. 315
She was dryuen wyth wynde and rayn,
Wyth stronge stormes her a-gayn,
   Of þe watyr so blo. 318
As y haue herd mestrelles syng yn sawe,
Hows ny lond myȝth she non knowe,
   A-ferd she was to go. 321
She was so dryuen fro wawe to wawe,
She hyd her hede and lay fulle lowe,
   For watyr she was fulle woo. 324
(28)
Now þys lady dwelled þore,
A good seuen-ȝȝth and more,
   As hyt was Goddys wylle; 327
Wyth carefulle herte and sykyng sore,
Such sorow was here ȝarked ȝore,
   And euer lay she styme. 330
She was dryuen yn-to a lond,
Thorow þe grace of Goddes sond,
   That alle þyng may fulfylle; 333
She was on þe see so harde be-stadde,
For hungur and thurste almost madde,
   Woo worth wederus ylle! 336
(29)
She was dryuen in-to a lond,
That hyȝth Galys, y vnfurstand,
   That was a fayr countre. 339
þe kyngus steward dwelled þer by-syde,
In a kastelle of mykylle pryde;
   Syr Kadore hyght he. 342
Every day wolde he go,
And take wyth hym a sqwyer or two,
   And play hym by þe see. 345
On a tyme he toke þe eyr,
Wyth two knyðus gode and fayr;
   The wedur was lythe of le. 348

(30)
A boot he fond by þe brym,
And a glysteryng þyng þer-yn,
   Ther-of þey hadde ferly. 351
They went forth on þe sond
To þe boot, y vnþurstond,
   And fond þer-yn þat lady. 354
She hadde so longe meteles be,
That hym þowht gret dele to se;
   She was yn poyn[t] to dye. 357
They askede her what was her name;
She chaunged hyt þer a-none,
   And sayde she hette Egare. 360

(31)
Syr Kadore hadde gret pyte;
He toke vp þe lady of þe see,
   And hom gan he[r] lede. 363
She hadde so longe meteles be,
She was wax lene as a tre,
   That wordy vnþur wede. 366
In-to hys castelle when she came,
In-to a chawmbyr þey her nam,
   And fayr þey gan her fede, 369
Wyth alle delycys mete and drynke,
That þey myþth hem on þynke,
   That was yn alle þat stede. 372

(32)
When þat lady, fayr of face,
Wyth mete and drynke keuered was,
   And had colour a-gayne, 375
She tawȝte hem to sewe and marke
Alle maner of sylky werke;
   Of her þey wer fulle fayne. 378
She was curteys yn alle þyng,
Bothe to olde and to þynge,
   I say ȝow for certeyne. 381
She kowȝte werke alle maner þyng,
That felle to emperour, or to kyng,
   Erle, barown or swayne. 384
Syr Kadore lette make a feste,  
That was fayr and honeste,  
        Wyth hys lorde, þe kynge.  
Ther was myche menstralse,  
Tromppus, tabours and sawtre,  
        Bothe harpe and fyddlelyng.  
The lady, þat was gentylle and smalle,  
In kurtulle alone serued yn halle,  
        By-fore þat nobulle kynge.  
þe cloth vpon her shone so bryȝth,  
When she was þer-yndyȝth,  
        She semed non erdy þyng.  

The kyng lokked her vp-on,  
So fayr a lady he syȝnewur non,  
        Hys herte she hadde yn wolde.  
He was so an-amered of þat syȝth,  
Of þe mete non he myȝth,  
        But faste gan her be-holde.  
She was so fayr and gent,  
The kynges loue on her was lent,  
        In tale as hyt ys tolde.  
And when þe metewhyle was don,  
In-to þe chambur he wente son,  
        And called hys barouns bolde.  

Fyrst he calle[d] Syr Kadore,  
And oþur knytes þat þer wore,  
        Hastely come hym tylle.  
Dukes and erles, wyse of lore,  
Hastely come þe kynge be-fore,  
        And askede what was hys wylle.  
Then spakke þe ryche yn ray,  
To Syr Kadore gan he say,  
        Wordes fayr and stylle:  
“Syr, whens ys þat louely may,  
That yn þe halle serued þys day ?  
        Telle me, ȝyf hyt be þy wylle.”  

Then sayde Syr Kadore, y vȝburghonde,  
“Hyt ys an erles þowȝtur of ferre londe,  
        That semely ys to sene.  
I sente aftur her, certeynlye,
To teche my chylderen curtesye,
In chambur wyth hem to bene.
She ys þe konnyngest wommon,
I trowe, þat be yn Crystendom,
Of werk þat y haue sene.”
Then sayde þat ryche raye,
“Í wylle haue þat fayr may,
And wedde her to my quene!”

(37)
The nobulle kyng, verament,
Aftyr hys modyr he sent,
To wyte what she wolde say.
They browȝ[e] forth hastely
That fayr mayde Egarye;
She was bryȝth as someres day.
The cloth on her shon so bryght,
When she was þer-yn dyght,
And her-self a gentelle may,
The olde qwene sayde a-non,
“Í sawe neuer wommon
Haluendelle so gay!”

(38)
The olde qwene spakke wordus vnhende,
And sayde, “Sone, þys ys a fende,
In þys wordy wede!
As þou louest my blessynge,
Make þou neuur þys weddyng,
Cryst hyt de forbde!”
Then spakke þe ryche ray,
“Modyr, y wylle haue þys may!”
And forth gan her lede.
The olde qwene, for certayne,
Turnede wyth ire hom a-gayne,
And wolde not be at þat dede.

(39)
The kyng wedded þat lady bryght;
Grete puruyance þer was dyȝth,
In þat semely sale.
Grete lordes wer serued a-ryght,
Duke, erle, baron and knyȝth,
Both of grete and smale.
Myche folke for soþe þer was,
And þer-to an huge prese,
As hyt ys tolde yn tale.
Ther was alle maner þyng,
That felle to a kyngus weddyng,  
And mony a ryche menstralle.  

(40)  
When þe mangery was done,  
Grete lordes departed sone,  
That semely were to se.  
The kynge be-laft wyth þe qwene,  
Moch loue was hem be-twene,  
And also game and gle.  
She was curteys and swete,  
Such a lady herde y neuur of þete;  
They loued both wyth herte fre.  
The lady þat was both meke and mylde,  
Conceyued and wente wyth chylde,  
As God wolde hyt sholde be.  

(41)  
The kyng of France, yn þat tyme,  
Was be-sette wyth many a Sarezyne,  
And cumbered alle in tene;  
And sente aftur þe kyng of Galys,  
And oþur lordys of myche prys,  
That semely were to sene.  
The kyng of Galys, in þat tyde,  
Gedered men on euery syde,  
In armour bryght and shene.  
Then sayde þe kyng to Syr Kadore,  
And oþur lordes þat ther wore,  
“Take good hede to my qwene.”  

(42)  
The kyng of Fraunce spared none,  
But sent for hem euerychone,  
Both kyng, knyȝth and clerke.  
The stward by-laft at home,  
To kepe þe qwene whyte as fome,  
He come not at þat werke.  
She wente wyth chylde yn place,  
As longe as Goddus wylle was.  
That semely vnþur serke;  
Thylle þer was of her body,  
A fayr chyld borne and a godele,  
Hadd a dowbylle kyngus marke.  

(43)  
They hyt crystened wyth grete honour,  
And called hym Segramour;
Frely was þat fode.
Then þe steward, Syr Kadore,
A nobulle lettur made he thore,
And wrowȝte hyt alle wyth gode.

He wrowȝte hyt yn hyȝynge,
And sente hyt to hys lorde þe kynge,
That gentylle was of blode.
The messenger forth gan wende,
And wyth þe kyngeus modur gan lende,
And yn-to þe castelle he gode.

(44)
He was resseyued rychely,
And she hym askede hastily,
How þe qwene hadde spedde.
“Madame, þer ys of her y-borne
A fayr man-chylde, y telle þou be-forne,
And she lyth in her bedde.”
She þaf hym for þat tydynge
A robe and fowrty shylynge,
And rychelie hym cladde.
She made hym dronken of ale and wyne,
And when she sawe þat hyt was tyme,
Tho chambur she wolde hym lede.

(45)
And when (s)he was on slepe browȝt,
The qwene þat was of wykked þowȝt,
Tho chambur gan she wende.
Hys letter she toke hym fro,
In a fyre she brente hȳt do;
Of werkes she was vnhande.
Anþur lettur she made wyth euyle,
And sayde þe qwene had born a deuyle,
Durste no mon come her hende,
Thre heddes hadde he there,
A lyon, a dragon and a beere,
A fowlle, feltred fende.

(46)
On þe morn, when hyt was day,
The messenger wente on hys way,
Bothe by stye and strete;
In trwe story as y say,
Tylle lie come þer as þe kynge laye,
And speke wordus swete.
He toke þe kynge þe lettur yn honde,
And he hyt redde, y vnþurstonde,
The teres downe gan he lete.  
And as he stode yn redyng,  
Downe he felle yn sowenyng,  
For sorow hys herte gan blede.

(47)
Grete lordes þat stode hym by,  
Toke vp þe kyng hastely;  
In herte he was fulle woo.  
Sore he grette and sayde, “Alas,  
That y euur man born was!  
That hýt euur shullde be so!  
Alas, þat y was made a kynge,  
And sygh wedded þe fayrest þyng,  
That on erþe myght go!  
That euur Jhesu hym-self wolde sende  
Such a fowle, loply fende,  
To come by-twene ys too!”

(48)
When he sawe hýt myȝt no bettur be,  
Anþur lettur þen made he,  
And seled hýt wyþh hys sele.  
He comanded yn alle þyngye,  
To kepe welle þat lady þynge,  
Tyll þe she hadde her hele;  
Bothe gode men and ylle,  
To serue her at her wylle,  
Bothe yn wo and wele.  
He toke þys lettur of hys honde,  
And rode þorow þe same londe,  
By þe kyngus modur castelle.

(49)
And þen he dwelled þer alle nyȝt;  
He was resseyued and rychely dyȝt,  
And wynste of no treson.  
He made hym welle at ese and fyne,  
Bothe of brede, ale and wyne,  
And þat be-rafte hym hys reson.  
When he was on slepe browȝt,  
The false qwene hys letter sowȝt;  
In-to þe fyre she kaste hýt downe.  
A-nþur lettur she lette make,  
That men sholde þe lady take,  
And lede her owt of towne.
And putte her yn-to þe see,
In þat robe of ryche ble,
    The lytylle chylde her wyth;  591
And lette her haue no spendyng,
For no mete ny for drynke,
    But lede her out of þat kygh.  594
“Vpon payn of chylde and wyfe,
And also vpon ȝour owene lyfe,
    Lette her haue no gryght!”  597
The messenger knewe no gyle,
But rode hom mony a myle,
    By forest and by frught.  600

And when þe messenger come home,
The steward toke þe lettur sone,
    And by-gan to rede.  603
Sore he syght and sayde, “Alas,
Sertes, þys ys a fowle case,
    And a de[ll]fulle dede!”  606
And as he stode yn redyng,
He felle downe yn swonynge,
  For sorow hysshert gan blede.  609
Ther was ȝour olde nyȝynge,
That myȝte for-bere of wepynge,
  For þat worpy vnȝur wede.  612

The lady herde gret dele yn halle,
On þe steward gan she calle,
      And sayde, “ What may þys be?  615
ȝyf any-pyng be a-mys.
Telle me what þat hyt ys,
      And lette not for me.”  618
Then sayde þe steward, verament,
  “Lo, her, a letter my lord hath sente,
      And þer-fore woo ys me !”  621
She toke þe lettur and by-gan to rede;
Then fonde she wryten alle þe dede,
  How she moste yn-to þe see.  624

“Be stylle, syr,” sayde þe qwene,
“Lette syche mornynge bene;
    For me haue þou no kare.  627
Loke þou be not shente,
But do my lorde’s commaundement,
God for-bede þou spare!
For he weddede so porely,
On me, a sympullie lady,
He ys a-shamed sore.
Grete welle my lord fro me,
So gentylle of blo(l)de yn Cristyante,
Gete he neuur more!"

(54)
Then was þer sorow and myche woo,
When þe lady to shype shulde go;
   They wepte and wronge her honde.[e]
The lady, þat was meke and mylde,
In her arme she bar her chylde,
   And toke leue of þe londe.
When she wente yn-to þe see,
In þat robe of ryche ble,
   Men sowened on þe sonde.
Sore þey wepte and sayde, “Alas,
Certys, þys ys a wykked kase!
   Wo worth dedes wronge!”

(55)
The lady and þe lytylle chylde
Fleted forth on þe watur wyld,
   Wyth fulle harde happes.
Her surkote þat was large and wyde,
Ther-wyth her vysage she gan hyde,
   Wyth þe hynpur lappes;
She was aferde of þe see,
And layde her gruf vpon a tre,
   The chylde to her pappes.
The wawes, þat were grete and strong,
On þe bote faste þey þonge,
   Wyth mony vnsemely rappes.

(56)
And when þe chyld gan to wepe,
Wyth sory herte she songe hyt a-slepe,
   And putte þe pappe yn hys mowth,
And sayde, “Myȝth y onus gete lond,
Of þe watur þat ys so stronge,
   By northe or by sowthe,
Wele owth y to warye þe, see,
I haue myche shame yn þe !"
   And euur she lay and growht.
Then she made her prayer,
To Ihesu and hys modur dere,
In alle þat she kowþe.

(57)
Now þys lady dwelled thore,
A fulle seuene nyght and more,
As hyt was Goddys wylle;
Wyþ karefulle herte and sykyng sore,
Such sorow was her ȝarked ȝore,
    And she lay fulle stylle.
She was dryuen toward Rome,
Thorow þe grace of God yn trone,
    That alle þyng may fulfylle.
On þe see she was so harde be-stadde,
For hungur and thurste alle-most madde,
    Wo worth chawnses ylle!

(58)
A marchaunte dw[el]led yn þat cyte,
A ryche mon of golde and fee,
   lurdan was hys name.
E(e)uery day wolde he
Go to playe hym by þe see,
   The eyer for to tane.
He wente forth yn þat tyde,
Walkynge by þe see syþe,
    Alle hym-selfe a-lone.
A bote he fonde by þe brymme,
And a fayr lady ther-ynne,
    That was ryght wo-by-gone.

(59)
The cloth on her shon so bryth,
He was a-ferde of þat syght,
    For glysteryng of þat wede;
And yn hys herte he þowȝth ryght,
That she was non erdyly wyght,
    He sawe neuur non s(h)uch yn leede.
He sayde, “What hette þe, fayr ladye?”
    “Lord,” she sayde, “y hette Egarye,
That lye her yn drede.”
Vp he toke þat fayre ladye,
And þe þonge chylde her by,
    And hom he gan hem lede.

(60)
When he come to hys byggynge,
He welcomed fayr þat lady þynge,
    That was fayr and bryght;
And badde hys wyf yn alle þyne,
Mete and drynke for to brynge,
   To þe lady ryght.                714
“What þat she wylle craue,
And her mownt wylle hyt haue,
   Loke hyt be redy dyght.              717
She hath so longe meteles be,
That me þynketh grette pyte;
   Conforte her ȝyf fou myght.”             720

(61)
Now þe lady dwelles ther,
Wyth alle mete þat gode were;
   She hedde at her wylle.                  723
She was curteys yn alle þyng,
Bothe to olde and to þyne;
   Her loued bothe gode and ylle.          726
The chylde by-gan for to þryfe,
He wax þe fayrest chyld onlyfe,
   Whyte as flour on hylle;                729
And she s[h]ewed sylke werk yn bour,
And tawȝte her sone nortowre;
   But euyr she mornede styyle.            732

(62)
When þe chylde was seuen þer olde,
He was bothe wyse and bolde,
   And wele made of flesh and bone;        735
He was worþy vnbur wede,
   And ryght welle kowþe prike a stede,
So curtays a chylde was none.           738
Alle men louede Segramowre,
Bothe yn halle and yn bowre,
   Wher-so-euur he gan gone.             741
Leue we at þe lady, clere of vyce,
And speke of the kyng of Galys,
Fro þe sege when he come home.           744

(63)
Now þe sege broken ys,
The kyng come home to Galys,
   Wyth mykylle myrthe and pride.         747
Dukes and erles of ryche asyce,
Barones and knyȝtes of mykylle pryse,
   Come rydynde be hys syde.              750
Syr K[a]dore, hys steward þanne,
Aȝeyn hym rode wyth mony a man,
   As faste as he myght ryde;              753
He tolde þe kyng a-ventowres,
Of hys halles and hys bowres,
And of hys londys wyde. 756

(64)
The kyng sayde, “By Goddys name,
Syr Kadore, þou art to blame,
For þy fyrst tellynge!
Thow sholdes fyrst haue tolde me
Of my lady Egare,
I loue most of alle þyng!” 762
Then was þe stewardes herte wo,
And sayde, “Lorde, why sayst þou so?
Art not þou a trewe kynge?
Lo her, þe lettur þe sente me,
Jowr owene self þe sofe may se;
I haue don þour byddynge.” 768

(65)
The kyng toke þe letter to rede,
And when he sawe þat ylke dede,
He wax alle pale and wanne. 771
Sore he grette and sayde, “Alas,
That euur born y was,
Or euur was made manne!
Syr Kadore, so mot y the,
Thys lettur come euur fro me,
I telle þe her a-none!” 777
Bothe þey wepte and þaf hem ylle.
“Alas,” he sayde, “saf Goddys wylle!”
And both þe[þ]y sowened pen. 780

(66)
Grete lordes stode by,
And toke vp þe kyng hastily,
Of hem was gret pyte; 783
And when þey both keuered were,
The kyng toke hym þe letter þer,
Of þe heddys þre. 786
“A, lord,” he sayde, “be Goddws grace,
I sawe euur þys lettur yn place!
Alas! how may þys be?” 789
Aftur þe messenger þer þey sente,
The kyng askede what he went:
“Lor, be þour modur fre.” 792

(67)
“Alas!” þen sayde þe kyng,
“Wheþur my modur wer so vnhende,
   To make þys treson?
By my krowne, she shalle be brent,
Wyþ-owten any opur jugement,
   That thenketh me best reson!”
Grete lordes toke hem be-twene,
That þey wolde exyle þe qwene,
   And be-refe her hyr renowne.
Thus þey exiled þe false qwene,
And by-rafte her hyr lyflofe clene,
   Castelle, towre and towne.

(68)
When she was fied ouur þe see fome,
The nobulle kyng dwelled at hom,
   Wyþ fulle heuy chere;
Wyþ karefulle hert and drury nwne,
Sykynges made he many on,
   For Egarye þe clere,
And when he sawe chylderen play,
He wepte and sayde, “Welle-a-vey,
   For my sone so dere!”
Such lyf he lyued mony a day,
   That no mon hym stynte may,
   Fully seuen yere.

(69)
Tylle a thougght yn hys herte come,
How hys lady, whyte as fome,
   Was drowned for hys sake.
“Thorow þe grace of God yn trone,
I wolle to þe pope of Rome,
   My penans for to take!”
He lette ordeyne shypus fele,
And fyllde hem fulle of wordes wele,
   Hys men mery wyth to make.
Dolys he lette dyȝth and dele,
For to wynnen hym sowles hele,
   To þe shyp he toke þe gate.

(70)
Shypmen, þat wer so mykylle of price,
Dyght her takulle on ryche a-cyse,
   That was fayr and fre.
They drowȝ vp sayl and leyd out ore,
The wynde stode as her lust wore,
   The weþur was lybe on le.
They sayled ouer þe salt fome,
Thorow þe grace of God in trone,
That most ys of powste. 837
To þat cyte when þe[y] come,
At þe burgeys hous hys yn he nome,
Ther-as woned Emarye. 840

(71)
Emare called he[r] sone,
Hastely to here come,
Wyth-out ony lettynge,
And sayde, “My dere sone so fre,
Do a lytulle aftur me,
And þou shal[l]t haue my blessyng.
To-morowe þou shalle serue yn halle,
In a kurtylle of ryche palle,
By-fore þys nobulle kyng;
Loke, sone, so curtays þou be,
That no mon fynde chalange to þe,
In no manere þynge!

(72)
When þe kyng ys serued of spycere,
Knele þou downe hastylye,
And take hys hond yn þyn;
And when þou hast so done,
Take þe kuppe of golde sone,
And serue hym of þe wyne.
And what þat he speketh to þe,
Cum a-non and telle me,
On Goddus blessyng and myne!”
The chylde went yn-to þe halle,
Among þe lordes grete and smalle,
That luftsumme wer vnþur lyne.

(73)
Then þe lordes þat wer grete,
Wysh and wente to her mete,
Men[s]trelles browȝt yn þe kowrs.
The chylde hem serued so curteysly,
Alle hym loued þat hym sy,
And spake hym grete honowres.
Then sayde alle þat loked hym vpon,
So curteys a chyld sawe þey neuur non,
In halle ny yn bowres.
he kynge sayde to hym yn game,
Swete sone, what ys þy name?”
“Lorde,” (he seyd) “y hyȝth Segramowres.” 876
Then that nobulle kyng
Toke vp a grete sykynge,
For hys sone hyghte so; 879
Certys, wyth-owten lesynge,
The teres out of hys yen gan wryng;
In herte he was fulle woo. 882
Neuer-þe-lese, he lette be,
And loked on þe chylde so fre,
And mykelle he louede hym þoo. 885
The kyng sayde to þe burgeys a-non,
"Swete syr, ys þys þy sone?"
The burgeys sayde, “300.” 888

Then þe lordes þat wer grete,
W(þ)esshen aȝeyn aftyr mete,
And þen come spycerye. 891
The chylde þat was of chere swete,
On hys kne downe he sete,
And serued hym curteyslye. 894
The kynge called þe burgeys hym tylle,
And sayde, “Syr, yf hyt be þy wylle,
3yf me þys lytylle body! 897
I shalle hym make lorde of town and towre,
Of hye halles antil of bowre,
I loue hym specyally.” 900

When he had serued þe kyng at wylle,
Fayr he wente hys modyr tylle,
And tellys her how hyt ys. 903
“Soone when he shalle to chambur wende,
Take hys hond at þe grete ende,
For he ys þy fadur, y-wysse; 906
And byd hym come speke wyth Emare,
That changed her name to Egare,
In the londe of Galys !” 909
The chylde wente aȝeyn to halle,
A-monge þe grete lordes alle,
And serued on rycha a-syse. 912

When þey we’ welle at ese, a-fyne,
Bothe of brede, ale and wyne,
They rose vp, more and myn. 915
When þe kyng shulde to chambur wende,
He toke hys hond at þe grete ende,
And fayre he helpe hym yn;
And sayde, “Syr, yf ȝour wylle be,
Take me ȝour honde and go wyth me,
For y am of ȝowr kynne!
ȝe shulle come speke wyth Emare,
That chaunged her nome to Egare,
That berys þe whyte chynne!”

(78)
The kyng yn herte was fulle woo,
When he herd mynge þo,
Of her þat was hys qwene;
And sayde, “Sone, why sayst þou so?
Wher-to vmbraydest þou me of my wo?
That may neuer bene!”
Neuþþþeles wyth hym he wente;
A-ȝeyn hem come þe lady gent,
In þe robe bryght and shene.
He toke her yn hys armes two,
For joye þey sowened, both to,
Such loue was hem by-twene.

(79)
A joyfull metyng was þer þore,
Of þat lady, goodly vnþur gore,
Frely in armes to folde.
Lorde! gladde was Syr Kadore,
And oþur lordes þat þer wore,
Semely to be-holde,
Of þe lady þat wa[s] put yn þe see,
Thorow grace of God in Trinite,
þat was keuered of cares colde.
Leue we at þe lady whyte as flour,
And speke we of (her fadur) þe emperour,
That fyrste þys tale of y-tolde.

(80)
The emperour her fadyr þen
Wa[s] woxen an olde man,
And þowȝt on hys synne;
Of hys þowȝtyr Emare,
That was putte yn-to þe see,
That was so bryght of skynne.
He þowȝt[e] that he wolde go,
For hys penance to þe Pope þo,
And heuen for to wynne.
Messengers he sente forth sone,
And þey come to þe kowrt of Rome,
(81) Emare prayde her lord, þe kyng,  
“Yes, a-byde þat lordys komynge,  
That ys so fayr and fre.  
And, swete syr, yn alle þyng,  
A-qweyte þou wyth þat lordyng;  
Hyt ys worshyp to þe.”  
The kyng of Galys seyde þan,  
“So grete a lord ys þer non,  
In alle Crystyante.”  
“Now, swete syr, what-euur be-tyde,  
A-ȝaynte ðou wyt þat þor;  
Hyt ys worshyp to þe.”

(82) Emare thawte her sone ðynge,  
A-ȝeyn þe emperour komynge,  
How þat he sholde done:  
“Swete sone, yn alle þyng,  
Be redy wyth my lord þe kyng,  
And be my swete sone!  
Whew þe emperour kysseth þy fadur so fre,  
Loke þyf he wylle kysse þe,  
A-bowe þe to hym sone;  
And bydde hym come speke wyth Emare,  
That was putte yn-to þe see,  
Hym-self þaf þe dome.”

(83) Now kometh þe emperour of pryse;  
A-ȝeyn hym rode þe kyng of Galys,  
Wyth fulle mykulle pryde.  
The chyld was worþy vnþur wede,  
A satte vpon a nobyll stede,  
By þys fadyr syde;  
And when he mette þe emperour,  
He valed hys hode wyth grete honour,  
And kysset hym yn þat tyde;  
And ður lordys of grete valowre,  
They also kessed Segramowre;  
In herte ys not to hyde.

(84) The emperours hert anamed gretlye,  
Of þe chyld þat rode hym by,  
Wyth so louely chere.
Segramowre, he s[tl]ayde hys stede,
Hys owene fadur toke good hede,
   And oþur lordys þat þer were. 1002
The chylde spake to þe emperour,
And sayde, “Lord, for þyn honour,
   My worde þat þou wylle here:
Je shulle come speke wyth Emare,
   That was þy þowþpur dere.” 1008

(85)
The emperour wax alle pale,
And sayde, “Sone. why vmbraydest me of bale,
   And þou may se no bote?” 1011
“Syr, and þe wylle go wyth me,
I shalle þe bryngye wyth þat lady fre,
   þat ys louesom on to loke.” 1014
Neuurþeþeþesse, wyth hym he wente;
Aþyn þym come þat lady gent,
   Walkynge on her fote. 1017
And þe emperour a-lyȝte þo,
And toke her yn hys armes two,
   And clypte and kyssed her sote. 1020

(86)
There was a joyfull metynge
Of þe emperour and of þe kynge,
   And also of Emare; 1023
And so þer was of Syr [S]egramour
That aþyr was emperour;
   A fulle gode man was he. 1026
A grette feste þer was holde,
Of erles and barones bolde,
   As testemonyeth þys story. 1029
Thys ys on of Brytayne layes,
That was vsed by olde dayes.
   Men callys “playn þe garye.” 1032
Iheso, þat settes yn þy trone,
So graunte vs wyth þe to w[o]ne,
   In þy perpetuall glorye ! Amen. 1035

Explicit Emare.
EXPLANATORY NOTES

1. i. ÞAT: ‘who’, indeclinable rel. pron. A ME pronoun from OE þæt; it has possibly developed from the demonstrative function to a relative pronoun by the subordination to the first of the second of two sentences which were originally consecutive.55

1. ii. YS: ‘is’, 3rd sing. pers. of the verb to be. In OE <y> is used for the sounds [y] and [yː]. These sounds survive only in the south western dialect and from the 12th c. on they were expressed by <u>. In the North and in the Midlands /y/ changed to /i/ and <y> became a written variant for <i>. This explains the spelling of the conjugated verb here.56

1. iii. KYNG: ‘king’, <OE cyning, cining, cyng, cing. Masculine noun belonging to the vocalic or strong declension. Contraction from cyning to cyng can be found already in OE. The form cyning was retained when associated to a person’s name (Aelfred cyning) but in ME the form king prevailed also in this case. Final /ŋ/ was already current in ME. OE /ü/ became unrounded to /i/ in late OE or early ME in the North and in most East Midlands counties. The vowel reached LME unchanged and was slightly lowered to /ɪ/ in EModE, which represents its current realisation. In OE Germanic <k> started to be differentiated into a guttural and a palatal sound, which in ME were both generally written <c>. Guttural <c> was written <k> before palatal vowels, thus

55 OED, that, pron., A.I.1.b.
kyng because of the front vowel /y/. <g> in the combination /ŋg/ remained in ME.\textsuperscript{57}

1. iv. TRONE / 2. MONE: trone: ‘throne’, < OF trone < Greek θρόνος. In words coming from OF with no stress shift, ME /ɔ:/ is long in open syllables, resulting in /troːnə/. The vowel then was narrowed to /o:/ early in the 16\textsuperscript{th} c. and it eventually reached ModE /əʊ/ through the stage of /ou/\textsuperscript{58}. <t> stands for Greek sound θ due to a pseudo-learned way of spelling. In the Renaissance period an <h> was inserted in some words after <t>, being <th> the transliteration used for words borrowed from Greek through Latin. This respelling started a change to the initial sound also in words that had initially /t/ as in thesis and theatre\textsuperscript{59}; Mone: ‘moon’ <OE mona, mone. The LOE sound /o:/ remained the same in ME and is labelled long close <o> as opposed to /ɔ:/ in the 14\textsuperscript{th} c., the spelling became <oo> to mark the length of the vowel. Further on, because of the Great Vowel Shift, /o:/ became /u:/ which is the current pronunciation in ModE. The rhyming vowel is /o:/; therefore it can be argued that when the text was written, the vowel in trone had already undergone raising to /o:/ because of the Great Vowel Shift whereas the vowel in mone was still at starting point /o:/\textsuperscript{60,61}.

\textsuperscript{58} OE /θrɔːnə/, ME /θroːnə/, ModE /θraʊnə/.
\textsuperscript{61} The work presents many instances of imperfect rhymes and assonances. Therefore henceforth, only the rhyming vowel will be taken into consideration. See § 2.3.
2. i. **TU:** ‘you’, <EME þu <OE ēu. 2nd pers. sing. pronoun, nominative. The ME personal pronouns retained distinctions of case, person, number and gender from their OE antecedents. For the 2nd person singular, the merging of dative and accusative forms already happened in OE. Therefore in ME we have *thou* for the nominative, *thee* for accusative and dative and *thi, thine* for the genitive. The 2nd pers. sing. pronoun can be found also in enclitic form, such as -tou, -te to be attached to preceding verbs.62

2. ii. **SHOOPE:** ‘shaped, created’ < OE scieppan – scop – scopon – scapen, 6th class of strong verbs. The strong verb is found unaltered only in OE, whereas in ME its forms were almost completely replaced by analogical new formations. A strong form of the preterite existed until the 14th c. but in ME two weak forms are also found: *shupte /yl/ from the original present form and shape* from the new analogic form shape. Also for the past participle ME developed two new weak forms, *schept* and *shaped*, but from the 16th c. only the latter can be found.63

2. iii. **BOÞE:** ‘both’, det. < EME baðe < Old Norse báðar (masculine), báðir (feminine), bæði, báði (neuter). bo and ba <OE ba and bei <OE begen coexisted with *both* until the 14th-15th c., when the former died out. Its use coincided largely with the current usage. The unvoicing of ð occurred when final

---


<e> started to disappear. For the development of long /o/, see 1. iv. TRONE above.

2. iv. SONNE: ‘sun’, <OE sunne <Old Frisian sonne, sunne. Weak feminine noun. Halfway through the 13<sup>th</sup> c., <o> replaces <u> in writing before and after nasals, <w> and where <v> = /u/; this becomes pretty general by the end of the century. <o> is written for /u/ also when it is followed by a single consonant + vowel in late ME. Compared to other phenomena, this is earlier than the writing of <ou> for /u:/ and later than the use of <u> for /y/. The original <u> is reintroduced in the spelling during the 16<sup>th</sup> c. and later, between 1600 and 1700, it undergoes delabialization from /u/ to /ʌ/. 65

3. i. SHALLE: ‘shall’, <OE sceal – sculon – sc(e)olde (‘to owe money’, now obs.). Preterite-present strong verb. Followed by an infinitive, it is used to form the future tense. It is in the late ME period that the differentiation according to the persons starts: shall is used for the 1<sup>st</sup> person whereas will is used for all other persons as in the current usage. The text here indicates that the verb was already employed as an auxiliary expressing futurity although in OE there often was a modal implication of volition. Its periphrastic use clearly indicating futurity starts in EME by the side of will, but the latter keeps a pronounced modal character indicating promises, wishes and resolutions until much later in the ME period. The distribution of the persons in the verb shall in ME is as follows: 1<sup>st</sup>,

---


2\textsuperscript{nd}, 3\textsuperscript{rd} pers. sing. and plur. when indicating that an event will take place in accordance with divine fate or will, predictions and prophesies; 2\textsuperscript{nd} and 3\textsuperscript{rd} pers. sing. and plur. when expressing commands and instructions, also in the 1\textsuperscript{st} pers. sing. and plur. when interrogative; 1\textsuperscript{st}, 2\textsuperscript{nd} and 3\textsuperscript{rd} pers. sing. and plur. in statements following conditional clauses.\textsuperscript{66}

3. ii. DELE: ‘deal, distribute’, trans. verb, today obs. in this meaning. ME dele, delt, dalt \textless OE \textit{dælan} – \textit{dælde} – \textit{dæled}. EME /ɛː/, which is generally represented by \textless e\textgreater, developed from LOE /æː/. The change from \textless æ\textgreater to \textless e\textgreater was only orthographical, as the sound remained /ɛː/. Some time after 1700 there was a shift of the formal style, where /ɛː/ was used, to a more colloquial style employing /iː/. This is due to the Great Vowel Shift and is the dominant pronunciation in LModE and the current orthography <ea> in \textit{deal} testifies to its derivation from /ɛː/.\textsuperscript{67}

3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE: dyghte: ‘govern’, \textless OE \textit{dihtan} – \textit{dihte} – \textit{dihtode} – (\textit{ge})\textit{diht}, \textit{dihted} (‘to dictate’, now obs.). ‘compose, unite’, ModE \textit{dight} – \textit{dighted}, \textit{dight} (now arch.). The ME sound combination /iʃ/, generally spelt <igh>, develops in the 15\textsuperscript{th} c. to /iː/. This is explained by the vocalization of the palatal fricative [ç] to /j/, leading to the rise of /iːj/ that is subsequently simplifies into /iː/. This started from the 14\textsuperscript{th} c. south of the Humber, except for the north-west Midlands, where /iː/ can be found only in the 15\textsuperscript{th}. The spirant-less pronunciation can be considered as a dialectal variety introduced from the East Midlands areas. It must be pointed out that the pronunciation of [ç] still existed in the

cultivated variety of London Standard English of the time. After front vowels, the fricative /x/ was lost at the end of the 14th c. as testified from numerous gh-less spellings, i.e. mit, fiten, ait for might, fight eight. When word finally, the loss is a consequence of the impact of ç-less inflected forms (high~hie)68; lyghte: ‘light’, <OE léoht. Strong neuter noun. The first stage of the diphthongization process was reached at the end of the 14th c. and rests in the development of /iː/ into /ii/ where the first element was slightly lower than the second. During the 16th and 17th c. LME /ii/ was probably turned into /ai/ and only a century later it developed into /ʌɪ/. The current realization /ai/ was reached after the lowering of [ʌ] at the beginning of the 19th c.. The rhyming vowel is /iː/.69

4. i. LENE: ‘lend, grant’, <OE lænan – lened(e-lende – lende, weak verb of the 1st class. In the present tense, the substitution of lend- for len- happened in EME because the past form lende would regularly correspond either to lenen or lenden in the infinitive and because of the analogy with verbs like bend, rend, wend, etc., lend with a non-etymological -d70 eventually prevailed.71 Nonetheless, forms with len- continued to be used up to the 19th c..

4. ii. DEDUS: ‘deeds’, <OE West Saxon dæd, Anglian ded. The current pronunciation descends from the Anglian variety, as StE developed in the areas where Anglian was spoken. In ME the phoneme /e:/ was written <e> and later

70 WELNA claims that the reason for the development from LOE lænan to lende, lend is to create a transitional sound after a liquid or a nasal.
<ee>. The plural in -us is recorded as a distinct northern West Midlands feature.72

4. iii. TO DONE / 5. iii. WONE: to done: ‘to do’, also ME done, dide, didon, idon <OE don, dyde, dydon, gedon. LOE /o:/ remained unchanged in EME but underwent raising to /u:/ in the 15th c. during the Great Vowel Shift arriving to the present pronunciation. Here the infinitive is expressed in an oblique form, presenting both the preposition to and the simple infinitive form, which was already rare towards the end of the OE period. Infinitives ending in -en or -n (from OE -an) are recorded in the South until the end of the 14th c. especially in monosyllabic verbs, whereas in the Midlands these suffixes disappeared earlier73; wone: ‘remain, live’, also ME wonien – wunede – wuned <OE wunian – wunode – gewunod (now arch.). The rhyming vowel is /o:/74

5. i. ϨY: ‘your’, <EME ði. Variant of thine with loss of final -n, which became the form of the 2nd pers. sing. possessive determiner before the replacement in StE with the current your.75

5. ii. BLYS: ‘bliss’, also ME blysse, blis <OE blids, blis. Strong feminine noun which undergoes a process of regressive assimilation and vowel-shortening in LOE from blids to bliss, blis. OE /i:/ is shortened in EME when found before two or more consonants.76

74 OED, won | wone, v., l.†2..
75 OED, thy, adj..
5. ii. MAY: ‘can, may’, <OE magan – mihte – muhte ‘be able to’. Preterite-present verb of the 5th or the 7th class or unclassified. The attribution to either class is difficult for phonological reasons because there are scholars who think that the original verb might not have been a preterite-present. May was possibly reformed by analogy under the influence of preterite-present verbs with -u- in the present plural—for example shall (see 3. ii. SHALLE above). The forms in -u- in the present indicative plural, present subjunctive, and preterite appear only in some LOE texts but -u- seems to have spread to the infinitive and the past participle in many ME dialects and was used in some English regional varieties until the 19th c.. The semantic shift from ‘to be able to’ to a meaning of possibility and permission started little later than 1200 and was completed before the 18th c..

6. i. HYT: ‘it’, <OE hyt. This OE form can be found until the 15th c.. Later, during the ME period, <h> was retained only in emphatic function and therefore dropped in all other cases. At length, this led to the dropping of <h> in all positions in ModE.

6. ii. HEUEN: ‘heaven’, <EME hefen <EOE heofon. The result of EOE /eo/ monophthongization is LOE /ö/ which became unrounded in EME in northern and eastern areas (LOE heofon >EME heven). LOE /e/ resulted in /ɛ:/ when lengthened in open syllable, exactly like LOE /æ:/ but in some current English words where /ɛ:/ is spelt <ea> to indicate the long open vowel, the vowel was


78 OED, it, pron., i.1.a.
eventually shortened. This shift from /ɛ:/ to /e/ when before a single consonant involves a large group of words and is very difficult to place in time. Nevertheless it can be argued that most of them underwent vowel shortening between the 15th and the 16th c..79

7. i. MODUR: ‘mother’, <OE modur. The process of postvocalic /d/ turning into /ð/ when before /r/ or /ar/ takes place over a long period, as spellings with <d> were still in use until the 17th c.. Although other grammarians place the beginning of this phenomenon in the 15th c.—this is due to many <th> spellings for earlier <d> appearing late—Dobson records spellings from the 15th c. onwards. The various stages of the phonetic change—confirmed by the spelling <dth> found in northern areas—might have been [da(r)] > [dd] > [dð] > [ð]. EME vowel /o:/ was identical to LOE /o:/ but underwent raising to /u:/ in the 15th c. and was eventually shortened to /u/ in EModE, although this might have already taken place in ME—historical long forms were more frequent at that time. In the Elizabethan period, high vowels tended to be slightly lowered, therefore /u/ developed into /y/ or /u/ in the middle of the 17th c. before reaching its current realisation /ʌ/ in the latter half of the century. 80

7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE: qwene: ‘queen’, <EME kwene <OE cwen. <k> starts to be used in ME to avoid confusion with French /ʃ/ <c> before a high vowel in initial position. Later, <qu> entered for OE <cw>. Here there seems to be an intermediate stage <qw> between OE <cw> and ME <qu>. LOE /e:/ remained unchanged in EME and underwent narrowing to /i:/ in LME reaching

its final and current realization; bytwene: ‘straight’, <OE bitweonum. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

8. i. ARUNDE: ‘message’, <OE ærende, arunde (now obs.). LOE /æ:/ is shortened in EME resulting in /ɛ:/ when preceding two unstressed syllables. <e> was used to represent the new phoneme.

9. i. SEMELY: ‘fair, beautiful’, also ME semliche (now obs.).

9. ii. SYGHT / 12. i. MYGHT: syght: ‘sight’, <OE sihð; myght: ‘power’, <OE meaht. For the vowel development of both words and the rhyme, see 3. iii.

DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE above.


12. MOST OF MYGHT: ‘the most powerful’.

13. i. WALKEN: ‘walk, wander’, <OE (strong, 7th class) wealcan – weolc – weolcon – gewealcen; (weak, 2nd class) wealcian – wealcede – gewalced. In OE the strong verb is found much more often than the weak one but this is probably only a recording accident. The strong preterite survived into the 15th c. before being completely substituted by the weak one. The ending in -en is a feature of the verbs in the Midlands dialects. Since the 12th c., the new ending

82 OED, between, adv., B.1.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 472. ii. QWENE / 473. BE-TWENE.
84 OED, seemly, adj., 1.a.; MED, 1..
85 OED, sight, n., †, I.†3..
86 OED, might, n., †, 1.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 400. SY3TH / 401. MY3TH.
87 OED, free, adj., A.III.17.a.; MED, 2b..
88 OED, be, v., II.4.a.; MED, 3.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 477. FRE / 480. BE, 789. BE / 792. FRE, 883. BE / 884. FRE.
was used for the 3rd pers. plur. and is probably an analogic extension of the ending of the preterite-present verbs in the plural. It was introduced to separate the 3rd person singular and plural, as the OE endings -eþ and -aþ merged at some point and were therefore indistinguishable. In the 15th c. the sequence /alC/ was affected by the development of a transition glide /u/, thus producing the diphthong /au/. Later on, ME /au/ and its LME continuation /ou/ went back to a monophthongal sound, /ɔ:/, which continues down to ModE without relevant changes. As for dark /l/, the pronunciation with /l/ survived into the 17th c., but it is quite possible that the phenomenon was already advanced by the end of the LME period, therefore in the 15th. The process consists in two stages: (1) the vocalisation of /l/ to /u/ and (2) its coalescence with the preceding /u/. /ul/ followed by a velar or labial was the context in which the loss of /l/ occurred without the addition of length. 89

13. ii. FER AND WYDE / 14. SYDE: LOE /i:/ passed unchanged into EME. For the diphthongization process due to the Great Vowel Shift, see 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE above. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

15. i. MONY: ‘many’, also ME moni, monie <OE moni- (inflected form). In ME the form most often recorded is with <a>. Other two forms, with <e> or <o>, are recorded: the former belonged to southern areas but was found only in scattered locations; the latter is recorded in a wide band stretching from


Lancashire towards the West and into the South-West reaching Somerset and also in the North of England and in southern Scotland. 91

15. ii. LONDE / 18. SONDE: londe: ‘lands’, <OE, ME16 lond. Strong neuter noun. OE /ɔ:/ before <nd> became /ɔ:/ in ME in all dialects except in the North where the sound was centralised in /a/ . The northern variant spread to all other dialects in the following centuries and reflects the current pronunciation92; sonde ‘sand’, <OE sand, sond. Strong feminine noun. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/.93

16. i. HER: ‘their’, also ME here <OE hiera, hira. 3rd pers, plur. pronoun. ME personal pronouns continue to retain OE distinctions of number, gender, person and case and were used in their genitive form in place of modern possessives. By the time the romance was written, there was a strong variability in the usage and occurrence of personal pronouns, according to dialects and areas: in southern areas, OE h- forms were the most used, whereas the Scandinavian th- forms started to spread southwards from northern and Midland areas, which had hosted the Danelaw settlements since the 9th c. The th- forms supplanted the Anglo-Saxon ones and completely replaced them everywhere in EModE in the 15th c..94

17. RYGHTWES: ‘righteous’, <OE ryhtwies.95

19. i. WHO-SO: ‘whoever’, also ME hwase, arch. .96

91 OED, many, adj., A.1.b..
92 OED, land, n.1, 3.a..
93 OED, sand, n.2, 3.a.; FISIAK, J., (1968): pp. 33-34. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 331. LOND / 332. ii. SOND.
95 OED, righteous, adj., A.1.a..
19. ii. STOUNDE: ‘while’, <OE stund, n., now obs.97


20. MYKYLLE: ‘much’, <OE mycel, now rare. <y> developed in two different ways. In the North and East Midlands the unrounding of LOE /y/ to /i/ started in the 11th c. but the vowel temporarily remained unchanged in the West Midlands areas and in the South. Here, before /tʃ/ and after labials, it started to be partly unrounded to EME /u/ by the 12th c.. High vowels had the tendency to be lowered during the Great Vowel Shift, therefore ME /u/ turned into EModE /u/ in the middle of the 17th c.. Nevertheless it is very difficult to say when exactly it became completely unrounded in its way to its current pronunciation with /ʌ/, as some Londoners apparently already realised it this way as early as the beginning of the 16th c.. The palate-alveolar stop /k/ became the affricate in LOE when between front vowels, therefore /tʃ/. In the neighbourhood of /tʃ/, <l> and <ll> were often dropped. The northern variant of mycel had /k/ instead of the affricate.100

20. ii. MYRGHT: ‘mirth’, <OE mirthp.101

96 OED, whoso, pron., 1..
97 OED, stound, n., 1.a..
98 OED, dwell, v., 5..
101 OED, mirth, n., †1.a.
21. i. MORNYNG: ‘mourning’, <OE muman, ‘to be sorrowful or troubled’, originally a strong verb but weak inflections were already attested in OE.\(^{102}\)

21. ii. A-MONGE / 24. i. SONGE: a-monge: ‘above all’, <OE on gemange. The replacement of the preposition on with the unstressed prefix a- testifies to the reduction occurring during LOE in unstressed syllables\(^{103}\); songe: ‘poem’, <OE song. EOE /a/ underwent lengthening before the group /ng/. In the passage to EME, the lengthened vowel became rounded reaching /oː/ in all areas except for the North, where it was fronted to /aː/. LME /oː/ was shortened before <ng> at the end of the 14\(^{th}\) c. and underwent unrounding becoming more open in EModE. At that time, with /o/, it reached the current pronunciation. The rhyming vowel is /oː/.\(^{104}\)

25. i. FADYR: ‘father’, <OE fæder. EME /a/ underwent lengthening in the passage to EModE due to its position before the fricative [ð]. It is at the end of the 18\(^{th}\) c. that /aː/ was retracted to /a:/ due to the Great Vowel Shift, reaching its modern realisation. For the process involving d, see 7. i. MODUR above.\(^{105}\)

25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE: emperour: ‘emperor’, <OF emperere <Latin imperator. Jordan records the last vowel as a long <u>.\(^{106}\); towre: ‘fortress’, <OE torr <Latin turris. Welna records the word among French loanwords without stress shift having long <u> in EME. Subsequently the Great Vowel Shift turned it into a diphthong which became [auə] in EModE because of

---

\(^{102}\) OED, mourning, n.1.2.


\(^{105}\) OED, father, n., 1.a; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 211, 236.

the presence of /r/. Later on in the 18th c., the first element of the triphong /æuə/ was retracted and lowered to /ʌ/ and further to /a/ later in the 19th c., reaching its current pronunciation. The rhyme here rests on /uː/.

26. i. CASTELLE: ‘castle, fortress’, <OE castel <Latin castellum. The word was taken into English at two different times: before 1000, meaning ‘village’ or ‘military camp’; later from Old Northern French with a meaning stretching from ‘fortified building’ to ‘fortress’, ‘stronghold’. In LME /a/ was lengthened to EModE /a:/ when followed by a fricative in consonantal clusters as well. The cluster <st> was in the same period simplified in its pronunciation, /t/ remaining only in the spelling and being lost in the realisation of the word. The vowel eventually reached its current pronunciation at the end of the 18th c. when /a:/ was retracted to /ɑ:/ due to the Great Vowel Shift as in 25. i. FADYR.

27. NOME / 30. NONE: nome: ‘name’, <OE noma. In EOE, the back vowel /a/ used to be expressed with <o> in many dialects and its realisation was /ɔ/. In the 10th c. <o> was replaced by <a>, possibly hinting at the lowering happening at the time in most OE dialects. LOE /a/ was lengthened in open syllables in the first half of the 13th c. and during the 15th c. /a:/ developed to /æː/, since it was fronted and raised because of the Great Vowel Shift. LME /æː/ was raised to /ɛː/ at the beginning of the 16th c. and for some time in the same century it coalesced with the ME phoneme /ɛː/—whose further development would later be /iː/. At the beginning of the 18th c. the narrowing which involved the vowel was complete and the new phoneme /ɛː/ set a balance in the long vowel

system. It lasted until the 19th c. when /e:/ was diphthongized to /eɪ/, i.e. the current pronunciation\(^\text{109}\); **none**: ‘no one’, <OE *nan*. Negative form of *one*, made up by the negative adverb *ne* and the article *an*. Starting from EME, this pronoun is a particular development of the numeral article, standing for ‘some one’ or ‘a person’. LOE /ɑː:/ was fronted to /a:/ in the North and in the Midlands and in the South it was raised and became rounded during the 12th c., reaching /ɔː:/\(^1\). The spelling also changed—it was expressed with <o> in the South and in the Midlands and with <a> in the North. In EME it was further narrowed to /oː/, probably due to the influence of a prothetic /w/ before /ɔː:/\(^{10}\). In the 15th c. /oː/ was raised to /uː/. Between the 15th and the 16th c., the shortening wave affected also vowels before /n/, therefore *none* is supposed to have been realised as [nun] before being unrounded to /u/ in the first half of the 17th c. reaching its current pronunciation with /ʌ/ by the end of the same century. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː:/\(^{11}\)

28. i. **HADDE**: ‘had’, preterite of the verb *haue* <OE *habban* – *hæfde* – *hæfed*, weak verb of the 3rd class. The verb underwent various stages of weakening mostly due to its stressless position in sentences, both in principal and in auxiliary positions. In ME the *habb*- forms were gradually reduced to *hav-* by levelling and at length the labiodentals f and voiced variant v were also lost when followed by a consonant, hence *ha-st*, *ha-th*, *ha-s*, *ha-d*. OE /æ/ was lowered to /a/ when entering EME approximately from around 1100 onwards


\(^{10}\) Prothetic /w/ was added before /ɔː/ as well. The word *one* shared the development of vowel in *none* but also kept the prothetic semivowel in its current pronunciation *wʌn*. [WELNA, J., (1978): p. 147].

and consequently started to be expressed with <a> from even earlier. In about 1500, /a/ started to palatalise to /æ/, reaching its current pronunciation.  

28. ii. HALLYS: ‘pavilions, halls’, also ME halle <OF hale, ‘covered market place’.  

28. iii. BOWRYS / 29. ii. FLOWRYS: bowrys: ‘bowers’, <OE bur. LOE /u:/ did not undergo any phonological changes in the passage to EME but in ME it started to be spelt with <ou> or <ow>—therefore as boure (about 1300) and bower (about 1500)— possibly through the influence of French. ME /u:/ developed into the triphthong [əʊə] because of the influence of /r/ in the 16th c. and by the 18th the starting point was lowered and retracted to /ʌ/ before reaching its current pronunciation with /ɑʊ/ as early as the beginning of the 17th c. in the North and everywhere else at the beginning of the 19th c.114; flowrys: ‘flowers’, also ME flur(e) <OF flur. Presumably borrowed from Norman French, the vowel entered ME as /u:/ and shared the same development as /u:/ in bowrys. The rhyming vowel is /u:/  

29. i. FRYTHES: ‘fields, pastures’, also ME fyirth <OE (ge)fyrhðe. Strong neuter noun.116  

31. LADY / 32. SEMELY: lady: ‘lady’, <OE hlæfdie. The two syllables syncopated provoking the shortening and lowering of /æ:/ to /a/ in the passage

---

113 OED, hall, n.1, 3.  
114 OED, bower, n.7, 3.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 103-104, 224, 238, 244.  
116 OED, frith, n.2, 2.
to EME. After the syncope, the vowel in open syllable underwent lengthening to /a:/ in all dialects. In the 15th c. with the Great Vowel Shift, the vowel was fronted and raised going back to the level of /æ/ but preserving its length. At the beginning of the 16th c. it reached EModE /ɛː/, which already existed in ME but the two phonemes did not share their later development. The narrowing occurring in the 17th c. led to /e:/ which was temporarily absent from the vowel system of EModE because of the raising of ME /e:/ to /iː/. At the beginning of the 18th c. this new /e:/ was widely accepted and it later underwent diphthongization in the 19th c., reaching its current realisation /ɛɪ/. Nowadays, the phoneme seems to be undergoing a process of smoothing, therefore going back to /e:/; semely: for the meaning, see 9. i. SEMELY above. The rhyming vowel is /æ/.\textsuperscript{117}

33. BONE / 36. NONE: bone: ‘bone’ <OE ban\textsuperscript{118}; none: ‘no one’. For the rhyme, see 27. NOME / 30. NONE above.\textsuperscript{119}

34. i. HETTE: ‘was called’, <OE hatan – heht – hehton – gehaten, ‘to call, to name’, strong verb of the 7th class. The verb in OE preserved its medio-passive voice until later than all the other Germanic languages: it was presumably in ME that the verb started to be exclusively active in form, although keeping also its passive sense. Later the passive sense became prevalent and supplanted the active in usage. As for the forms, after losing its passive forms, the present stem disappeared and the past tense—which had an old reduplicated form and a contracted one het—was substituted by hight (through heȝt, hiht) and hete

---

\textsuperscript{118} OED. bone, n., l.1.a..
\textsuperscript{119} The same rhyme occurs in ll. 735. BONE / 738. NONE.
(through *het*, *heet*). In ME its inflection had become *hote*, *hēt* or *hight*, *hote* (*n.*. Through the centuries the verb was affected by levelling and various forms of analogy which eventually led to the form *hight*, used nowadays only in literary language as a past simple and a past participle, and *heighted*, used as a past participle in some dialects.\textsuperscript{120}

34. ii. **EMPERES / 35. GOODNESSE**: *emperes*: ‘empress’, also ME *emperess(e)* <OF *emperesse*\textsuperscript{121}; *goodnesse*: ‘virtue’, <OE *godnes*.\textsuperscript{122} The rhyming vowel is */eː/.

37. **MANNE / 38. ÞANNE**: *manne*: ‘man’, <OE *manna*, *monn*. The back vowel /a/ in the context +*/N*/ of words of Germanic origin developed to dark */ɔː:/ and was expressed by <o> until the 10\textsuperscript{th} c., when it started to be written <a>, possibly reflecting the then ongoing process of lowering of the vowel which became /a/ in the 15\textsuperscript{th} c.\textsuperscript{123}; *ðanne*: ‘at that time’, <OE *þanne*, *þonne*, *þænne*. In the 15\textsuperscript{th} c. it was reduced to *þen* and subsequently spelt *then*, which influenced the spelling of the conjunction *than* during the 16\textsuperscript{th} c., until the 17\textsuperscript{th} when the conjunction and the adverb eventually differentiated into *then*, adv. and *than*, conj.. The rhyming vowel is */a/.\textsuperscript{124}

39. i. **ÞER-TO**: ‘also’, <OE *þær to*, now form. or arch..\textsuperscript{125}

\textsuperscript{120} OED, *hight*, v.\textsuperscript{1}, II.5.a..
\textsuperscript{121} OED, *empress*, n.\textsuperscript{1}, 1..
\textsuperscript{122} OED, *goodness*, n., 1.a..
\textsuperscript{124} OED, *then*, adv., I.1.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 751. ÞANNE / 752. MAN, 949. ÞEN / 950. MAN.
\textsuperscript{125} OED, thereto, adv., 3..
39. ii. WYGHT / 42. ii. DYGHTE: 
wyght: ‘courageous’, arch. (in use until the late 19th c.), also ME wiht\(^{126}\); 
dyght: ‘govern’, see 3. iii.. For the rhyme and the development of the vowel, see 3. iii. DYGHTE 6. LYGHTE above.

40. ȜYN / 41. ȜYNGE: byng: ‘circumstances’, <OE ðing. Strong neuter noun. The unchanged plural is a feature of its declension which survived in the South in ME together with the analogical plural in -s. After the unrounding, <y> was equal in value to <i> and since the latter half of the 13th c. it started to be written for /ɪ/. In an -ng context, shortness prevails\(^{127}\); ñinge: ‘the young’, <OE ging. The form with /ɪ/—a particular case of the unrounding of y > i due to the influence of the preceding palatal sound <ȝ>—is a typical southern variant. The rhyme here rests on /ɪ/.\(^{128}\)

42. KOWTH: ‘could’, <OE cunnan, ‘to know, to know how, to be mentally able’, preterite-present verb of the 3rd class. These verbs have in common an original preterite form used as present tense. The OE inflection was can for the 1st and 3rd person, canst for the 2nd, cunnon for the plural, couþe for the preterite. Analogy is very important in the history of this verb: firstly, because the new preterite coude was formed by analogy with the weak preterites in -de in the ME period; secondly, the <i> we find in the modern past tense could was inserted by analogy with should and would in the 16th c. and is therefore non-etymological.\(^{129}\)

\(^{126}\) OED, wight, adj., A.1.a.


\(^{128}\) OED, young, adj., A.1.a.; JORDAN, R. (1974): p.70. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 64. THYNGE / 65. ñYNGE, 379. ñYNGE / 380. 3YNGE, 568. ñYNGE / 569. 3YNGE, 724. ñYNGE / 725. 3YNGE.

43. LYUE / 44. ii. WYFE: lyue: ‘life’, <OE liif\(^{130}\); wyfe: ‘wife’, <OE wif, strong noun. For the rhyme and the pronunciation, see 13. ii. FER AND WYDE / 14. SYDE above.\(^{131}\)

44. BE-GETEN: ‘generated, born’, <OE begit-an – begate – begeten. From the beginning this verb had an open e in the present stem and therefore followed the conjugation of the 4\(^{th}\) strong class (e-a-o series). In the 16\(^{th}\) c., the past tense was often begot, because of the assimilation of the past participle form and from the 17\(^{th}\) c. onwards, the two forms eventually merged. The past participle gotten is almost obsolete in BrE, whereas it is still very common in AmE.\(^{132}\)

45. BRYGHT / 48. SYGHT: bryght: ‘bright’, <OE beorht, now arch.\(^{133}\); syght: ‘sight’, for the etymology, see 9. ii. SYGHT above. For the rhyme and the vowel development, see 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE above.\(^{134}\)

46. i. FOR SO\(\varepsilon\): ‘in truth’, <OE forsoð. Made up by the preposition for and the neuter noun soð, used up to the first half of the 17\(^{th}\) c. with the meaning of ‘truth, verity’.\(^{135}\)

46. ii. \(\varepsilon\)E / 47. EMARE: be: ‘you’, <OE ſe. For the usage of the 2\(^{nd}\) person singular pronoun, see 2. i. ſOU above. The vowel in thee developed as the one

\(^{130}\) OED, life, n., I.1.a..
\(^{131}\) OED, wife, n., 2.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 595. ii. WYFE / 596. LYFE.
\(^{132}\) OED, beget, v., 2.a..
\(^{133}\) OED, bright, adj., A.3..
\(^{134}\) OED, sight, n., 1.13.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 697. BRYTH / 698. SYGHT.
\(^{135}\) OED, forsooth, adv., 1.†a..
in 7. ii. QWENE\textsuperscript{136}; Emare: the proper name of the main character. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

49. BORN / 50. BORNE: born: ‘born’, <OE beran – bær – bæron – boren, strong verb of the 4\textsuperscript{th} class. LOE /o/- was lengthened and retracted to EME /ɔ:/ when before /r/. The vowel reached EModE unchanged because of the influence of /r/ which blocked the raising of the vowel, the normal development with the Great Vowel Shift. Moreover, /r/ influenced /ɔ:/ which was gradually reduced and lost, leaving as a trace an indefinite vowel sound, favouring the diphthong [œə], an allophone of /o/. The current pronunciation is recorded for the first time towards the end of the 18\textsuperscript{th} c.. The diphthong had by then monophtongized to /ɔ:/; borne: ‘born’. The rhyme rests either on /o/ or /ɔ:/\textsuperscript{137}.

51. ςΟΟ / 54. GOO: ςoo: ‘at the time’, <OE þa. The adverb was originally a case-form of the stem þa- from which the and that derive: it was either the accusative singular feminine or an unstroressed form of the original accusative masculine\textsuperscript{138}; goo: ‘walk’, <OE gan. The OE inflections are: present tense ga, past participle gegan. It originally did not have a past tense, therefore it was integrated with eode which was an extension of a lost synonymous form in Gothic, with the suffix for the past tense of weak verbs. Around the 15\textsuperscript{th} c. the past tense was substituted once again with the past tense of the verb wend (‘to alter the position or direction of’), which had become in the meantime a synonym of go. /a:/ was rounded and raised to /ɔ:/ from LOE to EME in the

\textsuperscript{136} OED, the, pron., A.I.1.b..
\textsuperscript{138} OED, tho, adv., 1.a..
South and in the Midlands, more precisely in the 12th c.. In the North it was fronted instead to /aː/. The new vowel was represented as <a> in the North and <o> or <oo> everywhere else. /ɔː/ was narrowed to /oː/ in the passage to EModE but surely before the monophthongization of LME /ou/ to EModE /ɔː/, as the two phonemes did not merge. In the 19th c. /oː/ diphthongized to /ou/ but go reached its current pronunciation later in the century when the diphthong was centralized and lowered to /au/ in Southern BrE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/.  

52. LADYE / 53. ii. DYE: ladye: ‘lady’. For ladye, see 31. above; dye: ‘die’, <EME deȝen, deghen. Weak verb of the 1st class. The verb is not attested in OE so it is thought to have disappeared in EOE and been re-adopted in EME either from Old Norse but more probably from some OE dialects, where the verb diegan, degan is attested. Deȝen, deghen entered EME regularly as deye but in the 14th c. deghe was narrowed to diȝe, dighe from which the later dye, die. Die is one of those rare not French loanwords where ME /eː/ nonetheless underwent narrowing to /iː/ possibly in the first half of the 15th c.. For the further development of the vowel, see 6. LYGHTE above. The rhyme here rests on /iː/.  

53. GAN: also ME gin – gann – gunnon – gunnen, strong verb of the 3rd class, arch.. Used in a weakened sense as an auxiliary verb to form a periphrastic preterite.

---

139 OED, go, v., I.†1.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 100-101, 218-219, 244. The verb can be found also on ll. 195. GON and 200. GOTH. The same rhyme occurs in 955. GO / 956. PO.  
141 OED, † gin, v., 1.a..
55. GENT / 56. SENTÉ: gent: ‘polite’, <OF gentil. The word underwent a stress shift from OF to ME and entered it with the vowel /e/.\textsuperscript{142} sente: ‘sent’, <OE sendan, weak verb of the 1\textsuperscript{st} class. The inflection of the verb was as follows: 3\textsuperscript{rd} person singular sendep, past tense sende, past participle sended. The syncope in the past tense occurred in OE in verbs with short stems ending in d, t or ȝ and in verbs with long stems and was extended to the past participle in ME. Furthermore, in the same period verbs ending in -nd, -ld and -rd started to have <t> instead of <d>; later it occurred also to verbs with longer stems ending in <n>, <m>, <l>, <r> or <v> (e.g. delen > delt). From EOE to LOE there was vowel lengthening in the sequence /end/ but the shortness was restored in this context in EME without further changes. The rhyming vowel is /e/.\textsuperscript{143}

57. ABRO / 60. MOO: Abro: the proper name of Emaré's governess; moo: ‘more’, <OE mara. LOE /ɑ:/ became rounded and was raised to /ɔ:/ in ME. During the LME period, in an +/r/ context /ɔ:/ was narrowed to /o:/ following what happened in every other position. The loss of /r/ gave birth to a centring diphthong of the [œa] quality which finally monophthongized to /ɔ:/ towards the end of the 18\textsuperscript{th} c. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/\textsuperscript{144}

58. i. THAW\textsuperscript{3}TH: ‘taught’, <OE tæc(e)an. Weak verb of the 3\textsuperscript{rd} class. The OE past tense and past participle apparently underwent shortening in EME, therefore resulting in tahte, taȝte. From here the current taught, deriving from taute, which was already recorded in the 14\textsuperscript{th} c. in some dialects. In the

\textsuperscript{144} OED, more, pron., B.II.3.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 100-101, 222, 236.
passage to EME there was a general wave of shortening of long vowels, in which ae was also involved. In this case, æ underwent shortening to /a/ because before a consonant cluster. When /a/ was followed by /x/, a /u/ glide was originated, the whole cluster resulting thus in /aux/. The development from ME /au/ to LME /ou/ seems to be controversial because of the spelling <au, aw>, which is rather conservative and does not reflect the actual change which was occurring. /a/ underwent regressive assimilation due to the influence of /u/ and reached the level of /o/ in the 15th c.. The further development of the diphthong /ou/ is doubtful. The monophthongization to /ɔː/ is based on the parallel /ai/ monophthongizing to /æː/ in the same century but in reality the change might have occurred in the North and later have spread to the South. /ɔː/ reflects the current pronunciation.145

58. ii. THEWE / 59. SEWE: thewe: ‘manner’, <OE þeaw. LOE /æː:/ + /w/ turned into /ɛu/ in the transition to EME. From EME onwards, various pronunciations coexisted, i.e. /ɛu/, /eu/ and /iu/ but the most frequently used in the 15th c. seems to have been the intermediate one, /eu/. /iu/ became widely accepted only in EModE. In this period a stress shift from the first to the second element of the diphthong also occurred, a shift which became general in use only by the end of the EModE period. We have thus the rising diphthong /juː:/, which is the current pronunciation146; sewe: ‘sew’, <OE seowan. Weak verb of the 1st class. The EOE falling diphthong /e(ː)o/ underwent a stress shift to the second element, turning into a rising diphthong. This possibly started from the

weakening of the first element in a +/w/ context, causing the following development EOE /e(ː)o/ > LOE /eo(ː)/ > /o(ː)/. Unexpectedly, the verb followed the group of words which had /oul/. The diphthong was a long lasting one, possibly, some scholars suggest, still present in the 17th c.—but it had many parallel monophthongal versions which coexisted, testified by a variety of spellings found especially in the east Midland area. In particular, the final spellings with <ow> were very early and testify to the fact that the monophthongization first occurred word-finally. The hypothesis rests on ME /ou/ undergoing progressive assimilation in the passage to LME /ɔː/. In the 16th c. it was narrowed to /oː/, giving way to the diphthongization to /ouː/ of the early 19th c. and to the current pronunciation with [əu] which indicates a form without stress shift, whereas the modern spelling is a result of the unshifted OE verb seowian, a weak verb of the 2nd class with the same meaning. The rhyming vowel is /el/.147

61. SMALLE / 62. iii. SALE: smalle: ‘small’, <OE smæl. LOE /æl/ was lowered to /l/, as is evident from the spelling <a> used from the 11th c. onwards. Later, in the 15th c., the vowel in a +/l/ context developed a transition glide /u/, testified by the <aul> spelling which however disappeared rather soon. The resulting diphthong /au/ was raised to /ou/ in the ME period. For the further development of the diphthong, see 58. i. THAW3TH above149; sale: ‘palace’, <OE sæl, strong noun, now obs. The rhyming vowel is /ər/.150

147 OE seowian > LOE sowan > ME sowe.
150 OED, † sale, n., a.. The same rhyme occurs in li. 459. SALE / 462. SMALE.
62. i. NORTUR: ‘nurture’, also ME norther <OF nurture.\(^{151}\)

62. ii. VSEDEN: ‘used’, also ME use – used – used, <OF user.\(^{152}\)

67. i. HONDES: ‘hands’, <OE hond. For the vowel, see 15. ii. LONDE.\(^{153}\)

67. ii. SLYE / 68. SYE: slye: ‘skilled’, also ME sleh <Old Norse slœg-r (arch.).

The diphthongal sounds of the Old Norse loanwords did not expand the ME vowel system when entering English because the diphthongs were replaced with the closest sounds already existing. The presence of short /e/ and the palatal fricative [ç] resulted in the development of a front glide /ɪ/, therefore EME sleh had /ei/ and later /ai/. In the ME period the diphthong was monophthongized but preserved its length, turning into /i:/.

For the further development of the vowel, see 6. LYGHTE above.\(^{154}\), sye: ‘saw’, <OE seon – sæh – sawun – sewen, strong verb of the 5\(^{\text{th}}\) class. Sye is one of the very numerous alternative spelling of the preterite singular of the verb. LOE /æ/ was lowered and retracted to /a/ when entering ME. For the further development of the vowel, see 58. i. THAW\(^{\text{TH}}\) above. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

69. i. MENSKE: ‘dignity’, also ME menke <Old Norse menska ‘humanity’, now mense, obs., except in Scottish.\(^{156}\)

\(^{151}\) OED, nurture, n., 1.a..

\(^{152}\) OED, use, v., II.8.a.

\(^{153}\) OED, hand, n.\(^{1}\), I.*1.a..


\(^{156}\) OED, † mensk, n., 1.a.
69. ii. HONOUR / 72. EMPEROUR: honour: ‘honour’, also ME onur <OF onor <Latin honor.\textsuperscript{157} For the rhyme, see 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE above.\textsuperscript{158}

70. WE / 71. FAYR AND FRE: we: ‘we’, <OE we, 2\textsuperscript{nd} pers. plur. pronoun. For the history of pronouns, see 16. i. HER and 2. i. ÞOU above. The vowel developed as the one in 7. ii. QWENE\textsuperscript{159}; fayr and fre: ‘of noble appearance’, now arch. and poet.. For the etymology of the word and the rhyme, see 10. FRE / 11. BE above.\textsuperscript{160}

73. BLODE / 74. GODE: blode: ‘temper’, <OE blod, strong neuter noun of the a-stem. LOE long back /ɔ:/ reached unchanged EME from LOE and was raised to /u:/ in the 15\textsuperscript{th} c. because of the Great Vowel Shift. With <d> in postvocalic position, the vowel underwent shortening between ME and EModE—it seems that the process was completed not earlier than 1640. In the case of blood (and also flood, done) though, the shift must have taken place quite early, as the vowel participated in the lowering of LME /u/ to EModE /ʌ/, which occurred in the latter half of the 17\textsuperscript{th} c. at the latest\textsuperscript{161}; gode: ‘virtuous’, <OE god. Good shares the vowel development of blood until probably the late 17\textsuperscript{th} c. /u/, the current pronunciation. Delabialization occurred only when the back vowel was

\textsuperscript{157} OED, honour | honor, n., 3.a..
\textsuperscript{158} The same rhyme occurs in 178. EMPEROUR / 179. HONOUR, 991. EMPEROUR / 992. ii. HONOUR, 1003. EMPEROUR / 1004. HONOUR.
\textsuperscript{159} OED, we, pron.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 187-188.
\textsuperscript{160} OED, free, adj.; A.I.3.a..
preceded by a labial (e.g. blood, flood) or a semivowel (as in wonder). The rhyming vowel is /o:/.

75. THYNGE / 78. PLAYNGE: thynge: see 40. ÞYNGE above; playnge: ‘playing’, <OE plægian – plægade (past tense and past participle), weak verb of the 3rd class. The uncertain origin of the verb and the numerous different forms recorded make it very difficult to determine its original type and the conjugation to which it belonged. LOE /e(ː)j/ turned into a new diphthong /ei/ in EME. Not much later though, the first element was lowered and the diphthong became /ail/. This process was completed in the 14th c. There are two hypotheses concerning the passage from ME /ail/ to the monophthong /æːl/. The first is that at the end of the 15th c. the reflexes of ME /ail/ and /aːl/ temporarily coexisted at the stage of /æːl/ in the language of the lower classes, whereas an oblique diphthong /æi/ was used by those who could read. The second hypothesis is that the /æi/ usage was limited to the north Midlands and the North, while in the South and south Midlands the diphthong /ail/ stayed longer, reaching /æːl/ in the 18th c. after an intermediate passage through /ei/. For the further development of the vowel, see 27. NOME above. The two words do not rhyme.

76. DEDE / 77. WEDDEWEDE: dede: ‘dead’, <OE dead. LOE /æːl/ was raised and fronted in EME, thus becoming /ɛːl/. Later on, between the 15th and the 16th c. the vowel was shortened when it was before a single consonant and raised to /el/; weddewede: ‘widowhood’, <OE widewanhad. The rhyming vowel is /el/.

---

79. WHYLE / 80. CESYLE: whyle: ‘while’, <OE hwil. OE /i:/ reached ME unchanged. For the development of the vowel, see 6. LYGHTE above. Cesyle: ‘Sicily’. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

81. WENDE / 84. HENDE: wende: ‘went’, <OE wendan – wende – gewend, ‘to alter the position or direction of; to turn (something) round or over’, weak verb of the 3rd class. The forms of the past tense and the past participle with the voiced variant -t appeared about 1200 and were used beside the -d forms until 1500, when they started to be regarded as the usual preterite of the verb. Eventually, when went replaced the old preterite forms of to go (eode, ȝeode) in the reflexive and in the intransitive senses, wend acquired the new form wended. LOE /e:/ underwent shortening in ME; hende: ‘politely’, adv., aphetic form of OE gehende, adj., ‘near, convenient’. For the rhyme, see 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.

82. BROWGHT / 83. ii. WROGHT: browght: ‘brought’, <OE bringan – brohte – broth, weak verb of the 1st class. To explain the development from LOE /ox/ to ModE /ɔːt/, it seems plausible that EME /ɔu/ had a variant [ou] when before /xt/, which joined the later development of ME /au/ (see 58. i. THAW above.). The loss of /x/ is a possible result of its vocalisation to /w/; wroght: ‘manufactured’, <OE wyrcan – worhte – geworht, weak verb of the 1st class. The inflection from wyrcan would be *worch but the substitution of k for ch

---

165 OED, widowhood, n., 1.a.
167 For the general behaviour of the alternation of <t> and <d> in past tenses, see 56. SENTE.
which occurred first in the north-midland areas about 1200 eventually produced the modern standard form *work*, possibly due to the influence of *work n.*, or to Scandinavian influence. The current past tense became of common usage in about 1500 and was formed directly on the infinitive stem. After being unrounded in OE, /u/ reached unchanged EME. The spelling <o> is due to the proximity of <w>, to avoid confusion among downstrokes. In the 15th c. the high vowels (and also /e/) in a +/rC/ context gave birth to a vowel of uncertain quality but possibly very close to /æː/ or /ɜː/. The rhyming vowel is /ɔːː/.\(^{171}\)

83. i. **WORDYLYE**: ‘elegantly’, also ME *worplych*.\(^ {172}\)

85. ii. **KNYʒT / 86. RYGHT**: knyʒt: ‘knight’, <OE *cniht*. The ME vowel derived directly from LOE /iː/ and developed exactly as 3. iii. **DYGHTE** and 6. **LYGHTE**. As for the cluster /kn-/ , the process of its reduction started in the 15th century mostly on a dialectal level, but it soon reached London. The reduction is a result of many intermediate stages. It could be either the result of the devoicing and affrication of /k/ to [x] and subsequent simplification of [hn] to [ŋ]—a voiceless allophone of /n/ which was later re-voiced because of the influence of an adjacent vowel—or a nasalisation of /k/ to [ŋ], which was later fronted to [n]. In the 18th c. the coalescence of [ŋn] led to /n/ but a wide variety of oblique pronunciations existed at least until 1650\(^ {173}\), ryght: ‘immediately’, <OE *rihte*. The rhyming vowel is /iː/.\(^ {174}\)

---


\(^ {172}\) OED, *worplych, adv.*, I.†b.


\(^ {174}\) OED, *right, adv.*, I.1.a.
87. i. SETTE: ‘set’, <OE settan – sette – geset, weak verb of the 1st class.\(^\text{175}\)  

87. ii. HYM: ‘himself’, <OE him + OE self. Hym used as a modern reflexive pronoun is the predominant usage until the late 15\(^{\text{th}}\) c.. However, reflexive pronouns started to be reinforced with self since OE: at the beginning it was separated from the actual pronoun or possessive and was used in all cases of the personal pronoun (only 1\(^{\text{st}}\) and 2\(^{\text{nd}}\) person until the 15\(^{\text{th}}\) c.). From about 1300, self began to be considered a noun—it was previously an adjective—therefore it could be combined with the possessive pronoun (my self, me self). Later the use of the personal pronouns with the nominative became rare and they started to be used as a distinct category, the reflexives.\(^\text{176}\)  

87. iii. KNE / 90. BE: kne: ‘knee’, <OE cneow. EOE /eːo/ monophthongized in LOE and was rounded to /öː/ in the 11\(^{\text{th}}\) c. as the EME orthography <eo> proves until much later. It was unrounded to /eː/ in about 1100 and in the 15\(^{\text{th}}\) c. it underwent narrowing to /iː/ because of the Great Vowel Shift, the current pronunciation\(^\text{177}\), be: ‘be’. See 11. BE above. For the rhyme, see 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above.  

88. DYGHTE / 89. PYGHT: dyght: ‘adorned’. For the etymology, see 3. iii. DYGHTE above\(^\text{178}\), pyght: ‘jewelled, set with jewels’ (now obs.), also ME pyȝt. For the rhyme, see 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE above.\(^\text{179}\)

---

\(^{175}\) OED, set, v.\(^\text{f}\), XI.*†105.a.108..  
\(^{177}\) OED, knee, n., I.1.a.; WELNA, J., (1978); pp. 44-45, 97, 187-188.  
\(^{178}\) OED, dight, v., III.10.a..  
\(^{179}\) OED, † pight, adj., 1.a..
91. RUBYES / 92. PRYS: rubyes: ‘rubies’, also ME rubee <OF rubi <Latin rubinus; prys: ‘value’, also ME pres, <OF pris <Latin pretium. Price entered ME with front vowel /i:/ which developed as the vowel in 6. LYGHTE above. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

93. SE / 96. ḖE: se: ‘see’, for the etymology of the verb, see 68. SYE above. The vowel development is discussed in 87. iii. KNE; ḖE: ‘you’, see 46. ii. ḖE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

94. i. CRAPOWTES: ‘toadstones’, <OF crapaudine.

94. ii. NAKETTE / 95. SETTE: nakette: ‘agate’. Probably a variant of achate with a prothetic n; sette: ‘disposed’, see 87. i. SETTE. For the development of the vowel and the rhyme, see 19. iii. DWELLE / 20. ii. TELLE above.

97. SONE / 98. ṖER-UPONE: sone: ‘immediately’, <OE sona. The vowel follows the development of 2. MONE; per-upone: ‘upon’, <OE þær ‘there’ + EME upon ‘upon’, arch. or formal. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/.

99. SE / 102. BE: se: ‘see’, for the verb, see 68. SYE above. The vowel development is discussed in 87. iii. KNE; be: ‘be’. See 11. BE above. For the rhyme, see 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

---

180 OED, ruby, n., A.1.a.
181 OED, price, n., II.3.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 108. The rhyme is also present in 130. RUBYES / 131. PRYSE, 139. RUBYES / 140. PRYSE.
182 The same rhyme is also present in 141. SE / 144. ḖE.
183 OED, crapaudine, n., †1..
184 OED, † nakette, n.
185 OED, set, v., I.VII.63.†a. The same rhyme is present in 142. ii. NAKETTE / 143. SETTE.
186 OED, soon, adv., I.1.a.
187 OED, thereupon, adv., I.1.a.
188 The same rhyme occurs in 135. SE / 138. BE, 355. ii. BE / 356. ii. SE.
100. i. **GLYSTERYNG**: ‘glittering’, <Middle Low German *glistern* ‘shine with a brilliant but tremulous light’.

100. ii. **STON / NON**: ston: ‘stones’, <OE *stan*. For the development of the vowel, see 54. GOO. non: ‘not’, <OE *nan*. See 30. NONE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/.  

101. i. **REDY**: ‘quick, prompt’, <OE ræde <EME rædi.  

104. i. **SERTES**: ‘certainly’, ME certes <OF certes <Latin *a certis, arch..  

103. **ON HYGH / FAYRY**: on hygh: ‘sitting on his throne’, here used as a noun, <OE *heah*. LOE /eː/ in a /+x/ developed a front glide /iː/, thus turning to [eɪç] in the 13th c.. In about 1500 it monophthongized to /iː:/ during the Great Vowel Shift and coalesced with original ME /iː:/ of [ç], the palatal fricative, to /j/ and to the consequent simplification of the resulting cluster /ij/ to /iː/. For the loss of final <gh>, and the development of the vowel, see 3. iii. DYGHTE and 6. LYGHTE above; fayry: ‘magic, an enchantment’, also ME feirye <OF faerie.  

105. i. **ELLYS**: ‘else’, <OE elles.  

105. ii. **VANYTY / CRYSTYANTE**: vanyty: ‘vanity’, also ME uanite <Latin vanitas; Crystyante: ‘the Christian world’, also ME cristiente <Latin

---

189 OED, glistering, n..  
190 OED, stone, n., 7.a..  
191 OED, none, pron., A.3.a.β..  
192 OED, ready, adj., A.1.3.b..  
193 OED, certes, adv..  
195 OED, fairy, adj., A.†3..  
196 OED, else, adv., 4.a..
The word had three different forms: the form *cristienté* (and the one in the text) derived from French, the more native one *cristentie* and the form *christianity* directly from Latin. Both the French and the English type were spelt with *<ch>* after 1500. In the 15th c., the familiarity with the language of the clergy gave birth to a 5-syllable type *cristianite* which later became *christianite*, *christianitie*, *Christianity*, supplanting the other forms by the 16th c.. The rhyming vowel is /i/.198

106. PAN / 107. NON: ban: ‘at that point’, see 38. PANNE; non: ‘none’, see 30. NONE. The two words here do not rhyme.199

109. i. AMERAYLE: ‘Emir’, also ME *amerail* <OF *amiral*.200

109. ii. DOW3TER: ‘daughter’, <OE dohtor. See 82. BROWGHT above.201

109. iii. HEPENNES / 110. WYTH-OUTEN LEES: hebennes: ‘heathens, the Muslims’, <OE hæðen. LOE /æː/ developed to /ɛː/ after 1100. /ɛː/ was replaced by /iː/ at the beginning of the 18th c. and was complete after 1750. /iː/ was the sound actually used in colloquial style, instead of the more formal /ɛː/.202, wyth-outen lees: ‘without’, <OE wiðutan203, and ‘lies’, <OE lyge, lee (northern dialects), strong masculine noun. The plural *lees* is typical of northern dialects. LOE /eː/ changed into /iː/ in EME when followed by /ŋ/ and from the 12th c. it started to be spelt with /i, y/. In ME /iː/ underwent triphthongization through /iːi/
reaching [æɪə] in the 16th c.. After that, in the 18th c. final [e] was lost and the first was lowered to /ʌ/, resulting in the diphthong /ʌɪ/. The current realisation /æɪ/ was reached in the 19th c.. The rhyme here rests on /ɛ:/.

111. i. **WROW3TE**: ‘made’, see 83. ii. **WROGHT**.

111. ii. **PRYDE / 114. ii. A SYDE**: *pryde*: ‘satisfaction’, <OE *prydo* (strong feminine), *pryde* (weak feminine). LOE /ᵻ:/ first underwent unrounding in the North and the East Midlands about 1100, whereas /i:/ in the West Midlands is attested only from the 13th c. and one century later in the South-West. For the further development of the vowel, see 6. **LYGHTE**; *a syde*: ‘on one side’, also ME *on syd*. For the vowel, see 14. **SYDE** above. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

112. i. **PURTREYED**: ‘decorated’, also ME *purteray – purtraid* (also past participle) <Anglo-Norman *purtraire*.207

112. ii. **HONOUR / 113. AZOWR**: *honour*: ‘honour’, see 69. ii. **HONOUR** above; *azowr*: ‘lapis lazuli’, also ME *azer* <OF *azur*. The spelling <ow> reflects the same development of French loanwords which entered ME with /u:/—see 28. iii. **BOWRYS** and 29. ii. **FLOWRYS** above. The rhyming vowel is /u:/.

114. i. **YLKE**: ‘same’, <OE *ylca*.209

115. **IN HONDE / 116. STONDE**: *in honde*: ‘in process’, <OE *hond*. See 67. i. **HONDES** above; *stonde*: ‘there were’, <OE *standan – stod – stodon –

---

204 OED, *lie*, n.1; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 95-96, 121, 188, 224, 238, 244.  
206 OED, *aside*, adv., A.III.$†$8.. The rhyme is also present on ll. 340. BY-SYDE / 341. PRYDE, 747. **PRIDE / 750. SYDE, 987. PRYDE / 990. SYDE.  
207 OED, *portray*, v., I.$†$1..  
208 OED, *azure*, n., A.1..  
209 OED, *ilk*, adj.$†$, 2.$†$b.
gestanden, strong verb of the 6th class. Standen, the regular form of the past participle, continued to exist until the 16th c. and was then supplanted by stood from the past tense. For the vowel, see 15. ii. LONDE and 18. SONDE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ/.211

117. i. SOWʒTE: ‘sought’, <OE secan – sohte – gesoht, weak verb of the 1st class. The normal development of this verb would be seech which can be found in some dialects. The current form with k is possibly due to the 3rd pers. sing. pres. indicative secp, which follows the regular development of the palatal plosive c before a spirant. The reason why this was not generalised to all verbs (e.g. teach) is however not clear.212

117. ii. WYDE / 120. IN HERTE IS NOT TO HYDE: wyde: ‘widely’, see 13. ii. FER AND WYDE; in herte is not to hyde: ‘that is the truth of it’, hyde <OE hydan – hidde – hyded, weak verb of the 1st class. The current past participle hidden is after strong verbs and is first recorded in the 11th c.. For the development of the vowel, see 111. ii. PRYDE. The rhyming vowel is /iː/.213

118. i. WYNTER: ‘winters, years’, <OE sing. winter, plur. winter. The plural occurs also without inflection until 1500.214

118. ii. MAKYNGE / 119. ii. ENDYNGE: makynge: ‘production’, <OE macung215; endyng: ‘completion’, <OE endian + OE -ende. For the rhyme, see 40. ÞYNG / 41. ÞYNGE above.216

---

210 OED, hand, n.1, II.*29.f.
211 OED, stand, v., II.*18.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 547. YN HONDE / 548. UN>URSTONDE.
212 OED, seek, v., I.1.a.
214 OED, winter, n.1, 2.
215 OED, macung, 2.
216 OED, ÞYNG, 2.
119. i. **OR**: ‘before’, also ME *hoore*, conj., now obs.\(^{217}\)

121. **WAS / 122. i. YDOYNE AND AMADAS**: was: LOE \(/æl\) was lowered to \(/al\) in EME. In EModE \(/al\) was not fronted to \(/æl\) as had happened in any other context because prevented by the presence of \(/w\). Later the allophone [a] was retracted and rounded to the point of \(/ɒ/\), again influenced by the preceding semivowel. The change was completely accepted only in the 17th c.. For the verb see 11. BE above\(^{218}\); Ydoyne and Amadas: proper nouns of the characters from an Anglo-Norman legend of the first half of the 13th c.. The rhyming vowel is \(/al\).

123. **TREWE / 126. HEWE**: trewe: ‘true’, <OE *treowe*. EOE \(/e:o/\) monophthongized to \(/ö:/\) in the 11th c. thus losing the first element; the remaining element underwent rounding. This can be inferred only from the EME spelling because the previous spelling was in use throughout OE. In EME the sound was spelled <ewe>, showing that there was unrounding of the vowel to \(/e/\) influenced by the adjacent semivowel diphthongized to \(/eu/\). Later the first element of the diphthong was raised to \(/i/\) possibly due to regressive assimilation, and the result was \(/iu/\). This phenomenon is difficult to place in time: Brunner dates it in the early 14th c.; Jordan-Crook places it in the first phase of the Great Vowel Shift in the 15th c.; Dobson claims that \(/iu/\) was the realisation of the 14th century London dialect; finally Fisiak affirms that it took place in 1600. Before 1800 the diphthong became a rising one after a stress

\(^{215}\) OED, *making*, n.\(^1\), l.1.a..
\(^{216}\) OED, *ending*, n., 1..
\(^{217}\) OED, or, conj.\(^2\), C.1.\(\text{f.b.}\).
shift and changed into the sequence /juː:/, widely accepted in the latter half of the 17th c.. The change first occurred word-initially and later also in the other positions. The word reached its current pronunciation in the early 18th c., when the diphthong in a /C/+ context was simplified to /u:/;219 hewe: ‘appearance’ now obs., <OE hiew. <eu> became <iu> in the 12th c. but the spelling was retained. The rhyming vowel is /eu/.220

124. i. HEM: ‘themselves’, <OE him, hiom, heom. Hem was the dative and accusative personal plural pronoun for all persons. In 1500 them and ’em were used respectively as more and less emphatic variants and in the 15th century them eventually supplanted ’em which remained in weak colloquial usage, mostly in the South. For the history of pronouns, see 16. i. HER above and for their use as reflexives see 87. i. HYM.221

124. ii. HONOUR / 125. TREWE-LOUE-FLOUR: honour: see 69. ii. HONOUR; trewe-loue-flour: ‘Herb Paris, True Lover's Knot’, <OE treowlufu. For flour, see 29. ii. FLOWRYS above. The rhyming vowel is /uː/.222

127. i. CARBUNKULLE: ‘carbuncle’, <OE carbunculus <OF carbuncle <Latin carbunculus.223

127. ii. SAFERE / 128. CLERE: safere: ‘sapphire’, also ME saphyr224; clere: ‘bright’, <OF cler. The word entered ME with /leː/. In LME, the weakening and

---

222 OED, true-love, n., 4..
223 OED, carbuncule, n., 1.a..
224 OED, sapphire, n., 1.a..
later loss of /r/ left as a trace the indefinite vowel /ə/, provoking the new
diphthong [ɪə] because of the presence of /r/. Moreover, the lowering influence
of the trilled consonant also led to the variant /eː/, as indicated by the spelling
<ea>, which was however used also in words having ME /eː/, as clear. In fact,
the spelling <ea> was for some time used in words with ME /eː/ (e.g. clear,
appear, fear where it consolidated as the current spelling) as well as in words
with LME /iː/ (e.g. cheer, deer, steer now having <ee>). The rhyming vowel is
/eː/.225

128. KASSYDONYS: ‘chalcedony’, also ME calsydoyn <Latin chalcedonius.226

129. NEWE / 132. GLEWE: ‘new’, <OE neow. For the development of the vowel
see 123. TREWE above227; glewe: ‘musical instrument’, <OE gleow. The
rhyming vowel is /eu/.228

133. DYGHTE / 134. ii. BRYȝT: dyght: ‘adorned’, see 3. iii. DYGHTE above229;
bryȝt: ‘bright’, see 45. BRYGHT above. The rhyming vowel is /iː/.230

134. i. TRYSTRAM AND ISOWDE: proper nouns of the characters from a
Norman (originally Celtic) 12th century legend.

136. RYGHT / 137. DYGHT: ryght: ‘sincerely’, see 86. RYGHT above231; dyght:
see 88. DYGHT above. The rhyming vowel is /iː/.232

---

226 OED, chalcedony | chalcedony, n..
227 OED, new, adj., II.7.†e..
228 OED, glee, n., 2.†b..
229 OED, dight, v., III.10.a..
230 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 439. BRYGHTE / 440. DYGHT.
231 OED, right, adv., III.10.a..
232 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 177. DYGHTE / 180. ii. RYȝT, 285. ii. DYGHT / 288. RYGHT.
145. i. THRYDDE: ‘third’, <OE *pridda. The metathesis /rV/ > /Vr/ in third appeared first in Northumbrian and became of common use only in the 16th c..\textsuperscript{233}

145. ii. HONOUR / 146. ii. DAM BLAWNCHFELOUR: honour: see 69. ii. HONOUR above; Dam BlawnchfeLOUR: proper name of the female character of an OF poem of the late 12th c.. In the same line we find the name of the male counterpart Florys.

147. BE-TWENE / 150. SHENE: be-twene: another spelling for ‘between’. See 8. ii. BYTWENE above; shene: ‘bright, shining’, <OE sciene. LOE /e:/ did not undergo any change in the passage to EME but it underwent raising to /i:/ in the 15th c., reaching its current pronunciation because of the Great Vowel Shift. The rhyming vowel is /e:/\textsuperscript{234}

148. ii. HONOUR / 149. TREWE-LOUE-FLOUR: see 124. ii. HONOUR / 125. TREWE-LOUE-FLOUR above.

151. i. KNY\textsuperscript{3}TUS: see 85. ii. KNY\textsuperscript{3}T above. For the plural in -us see 4. ii. DEDUS above.

151. ii. SENATOWRES / 152. VERTUES: senatowres: ‘senators, high officials’, also ME senatur <OF senateur <Latin senator\textsuperscript{235}; vertues: ‘powers’, also ME uertu <OF vertu. The word underwent stress shift and entered English with /ü:/—which continued to be used by educated speakers up to EModE—and was

\textsuperscript{234} OED, sheen, adj., 2.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 95-96, 187-188. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 933. SHENE / 936. BY-TWENE.
\textsuperscript{235} OED, senator, n., 1.a.
diphthongized and partially unrounded in EME, reaching the value of /iu/ and coalescing with native /iu/. In the second half of the 17th c., the diphthong underwent stress shift and became rising, turning into /ju:/ The rhyming vowel is /u:/.

153. i. TO WYTE: ‘to be sure’, obs., <OE witan – wise – gewiten, originally meaning ‘I have seen, hence I know’, preterite-present verb of the 1st class. The original conjugation was anomalous (infinitive wit or wete; present tense: I, he wot; thou wost; we, ye, they wite; preterite wist; past participle witen), there were various attempts to normalize it through analogy and irregular extension of the use of some forms, resulting in a new infinitive and present-stem forms such as wis, wist, wot. From the preterite wist a new verb originated in about 1550, meaning ‘to know’ and in use until the end of the 19th c.


155. PERYDOTES: ‘garnets’, also ME peritote <Anglo-Norman peridou.

---

238 OED, † ween, n., 4.b.
239 OED, coral, n., 1.
240 OED, crystal, n., 2.a.
157. i. FOWRTHE: ‘fourth’, <OE feowerða. For the development of the vowel, see 123. TREWE.241

157. ii. OON / 158. ii. SONNE: ‘one’, <OE aan, see 30. NONE above; sonne: ‘son’, <OE sunu. LOE /u/ did not change when entering EME. For the further development of the vowel, see 7. i. MODUR above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/.242

158. i. SOWDAN: ‘sultan’, < medieval Latin sultanus.

159. BY / 162. STORYE: by: ‘by, next to’, <OE be (unaccented), bi (accented). In ME the preposition was written both by and bi, whereas ModE leaves be- as a stressless suffix and makes by the preposition (and adverb) in all positions and senses243; storye: ‘story’, also ME storie <OF estorie <Latin historia. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/.244

160. WROWGHT / 161. THOWGHT: wrowght: ‘manufactured’, see 83. ii. WROGHT; thowght: ‘thought’, <OE ðocht, strong masculine noun. For the rhyme, see 82. BROWGHT / 83. ii. WROGHT above.245

163. BY-FORN / 164. UNYKORN: by-forn: ‘in front’, <OE biforan, beforan, compound of OE bi-, prefix + foran, adv.. LOE /ɔ/ reached EME unchanged and was later lengthened to /ɔː/ when reaching EModE. In a + /r/ context, Wright suggests that the lengthening led to the gradual weakening and loss of /r/, thus /ɔː/; on the other hand Prins explains that /ɔ/ was not lengthened but slightly lowered to /ɔ/ and the loss of /r/ left an indefinite vowel as a trace. The two

241 OED, fourth, adj., A.1..
242 OED, son, n., 1.a..
243 OED, by, prep., A.l.*1.a..
244 OED, story, n., l.†1.a..
245 OED, thought, n., l.1.a..
current realisations /ɔː/ or /œə/ are alternative\textsuperscript{246}; unykorn: ‘unicorn’, also ME unicorne <OF unicone. The rhyming vowel is /oː/.\textsuperscript{247}

165. HYE / 168. ii. YMAGERYE: hye: ‘high’, see 103. HYGH above; ymage\textsuperscript{ry}e: ‘embroidery’, <Anglo-Norman ymage\textsuperscript{ry}e. The rhyming vowel is /iː/.\textsuperscript{248}

166. i. BRYDDES: ‘birds’, <OE brid, masculine noun. The metathesis operative in bird is the same which affected 145. i. THRYDDE.\textsuperscript{249}

168. i. STUFFED: ‘filled’, <OF estoffer, ‘to furnish, equip’.\textsuperscript{250}

169. WROWGHT / 170. BROW\textsuperscript{ȝ}T: see 82. BROWGHT / 83. ii. WROGHT above.

171. SY\textsuperscript{ȝ}TE / 174. ii. MY\textsuperscript{ȝ}TH: sy\textsuperscript{ȝ}t\textsuperscript{e}: ‘sight’, see 48. SYGHT above; my\textsuperscript{ȝ}th: ‘might’, <OE meaht. The sequence /æœxt/ became /ixt/ through /iext/ in EOE and the cluster entered LOE as /iː/. This process is called ‘palatal umlaut’ and consists in the fronting of the vowel preceding final /xt/. LOE /iː/ did not change when entering ME and then developed exactly as 3. iii. DYGHTE and 6. LYG\textsuperscript{ȝ}HT. The rhyming vowel is /iː/.\textsuperscript{251}

172. MAN / 173. WAN: man: ‘man’, see 37. MANNE; wan: ‘won’ <OE winnan – wann – wunnon – gewinnan, strong verb belonging to the 3rd class. The modern won derives from the OE plural preterite form, where LOE /u/ was spelt <o> because of the neighbourhood of <n>—but that worked also in proximity of

\textsuperscript{247} OED, unicorn, n., i.2..
\textsuperscript{248} OED, imagery, n., 1.†b..
\textsuperscript{250} OED, stuff, v.1., 9.a..
<m, v, w>—to avoid confusion. Both the realisation and the spelling passed to EME. From now onwards, the vowel developed as in 7. i. MODUR. The rhyme here rests on /a/.\textsuperscript{252}

174. i. MAYSTRYE: ‘ability’, also ME maiestrie <OF maistrie. Subsequently it was remodelled after master.\textsuperscript{253}

175. i. 3AF: ‘gave’, <OE giefan – geaf – geafon. – gifen, strong verb of the 5\textsuperscript{th} class. The forms with initial <g> are recorded in the north-eastern Midlands in the 13\textsuperscript{th} c. but the forms with <ȝ> remained common in use up to the 15\textsuperscript{th} c.. The palatal forms disappeared completely in literary language starting from 1500 but are still sometimes used in modern dialects. The g-forms, which spread first in the Midlands dialects and subsequently southwards, are possibly of Scandinavian origin, since on the one hand there is no valid hypothesis of analogy and on the other the regular forms of the infinitive in early northern texts were gif, give, resembling Swedish gifva and Danish give.\textsuperscript{254}

175. ii. ME / 176. ii. IN SPECYALTE: me: ‘me’, <OE me. OE also had an accusative form mec, which fell into me (accusative and dative) in ME. The pronoun also had a weak form ma, mah and m- and m’ when before vowels which anyway did not pass into ME or, better, it coalesced with the weak form of my, adj.. EME /e:/ underwent narrowing to /i:/ during the Great Vowel Shift\textsuperscript{255}; in

\textsuperscript{253} OED, mastery, n., 4.a..
\textsuperscript{254} OED, give, v., 1.1.a..
specyalte: ‘as a special mark of favour’, also ME specyalte <OF especialté. The rhyming vowel is /eː/.\(^{256}\)

176. i. BRYNGE: ‘bring’, see 82. BROWGHT above.

180. i. DONKEDE: ‘thanked’, <OE pongian – pongede – gebongod, weak verb of the 2\(^{nd}\) class.\(^{257}\)

181. PER / 182. WER: ber: ‘there’, <OE þær, þær, þer. LOE /æː/ became more close when entering EME, reaching the value of /ɛː/, which started to be represented by <e>. Later, in EModE, the sequence /ɛː/ (+ /r/) reached the modern pronunciation [ɛə], merging with the result of LME /æːr/, as confirmed by some spellings (e.g. <bare> for bear, <pare> for pear)\(^{258}\), wer: ‘was’, <EOE uuærun. The vowel in both words shared the same development. The rhyming vowel is /ɛː/.\(^{259}\)

183. PLAY / 186. WAY: play: ‘amuse himself’, see 78. PLAYNGE above; way: ‘journey’, <OE weg. For the development of the vowel, see 78. PLAYNGE above. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/.\(^{260}\)

184. WENDE / 185. ii. HENDE: wende: see 81. WENDE; hende: ‘end’, <OE ende, strong masculine noun. For the rhyme, see 55. GENT / 56. SENTE above.\(^{261}\)

\(^{256}\) OED, specialty, n., i.1.†b..
\(^{257}\) OED, thank, v., †1..
\(^{259}\) The form wer is recorded in the OED as a regional variant of the 1\(^{st}\) and 3\(^{rd}\) pers. sing. of the past indicative of the verb to be, in use until the 19\(^{th}\) century. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 721. THER / 722. WERE, 784. WERE / 785. PER.
\(^{260}\) OED, way, n., V.**34.†a..
\(^{261}\) OED, end, n., II.7.a..
185. i. LEUE: ‘leave’, <OE leaf, strong feminine noun.  

187. i. REMEUETH: ‘departs’, also ME remefe <Anglo-Norman remover.  


189. MAY / 192. ii. DAY: may: ‘maiden’, <OE mæden, strong neuter. Maid is one of those words which coexisted with its -n ending form maiden. In fact, early in ME, many words ending in -n experienced in southern texts shortening with loss of the nasal in an unstressed vowel (e.g. game, clew, eve, morrow). This development is possibly due to the modifications in noun inflection of the period, when -e in the singular and -en in the plural became invariable in all grammatical cases in particular historically strong feminine and weak nouns; day: ‘day’, <OE dæg. For the development of the vowel, see 78. PLAYNGE above. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/.  

192. i. SOMERES DAY: ‘summer’s day’, <Old Frisian sumersdey.  

193. i. DY3TE HEM: ‘get ready’, now obs. See 3. iii. DYGHTE. 


---

262 OED, leave, n.†, 2.a.  
263 OED, remove, v., 1.a.  
264 OED, longing, n., 1.  
265 OED, maid, n., I.2.a.  
266 OED, day, n., I.1.a. The rhyme occurs also on ll. 418. ii. MAY / 419. DAY, 438. SOMERES DAY / 441. MAY, 814. DAY / 815. ii. MAY (here with the same meaning of 5. ii. MAY).  
267 OED, summer’s day, n., a.  
268 OED, sight, v., III.†11.
195. i. GON: ‘go’, see 54. GOO above.

195. ii. FARE / UNDER GARE: fare: ‘far’, <OE feor. LOE /œ/ underwent unrounding to ME /e/ first in the East and in the North in about 1100 and in the 14th c. in the West. In the early 15th c., when followed by /r/ in the same syllable it was lowered to LME /a/, both in native words and in loanwords, which, eventually, went back to the realisation /er/ (e.g. certain, desert, etc.) because influenced by Latin. However these words were pronounced with /ar/ during LME. The process must have started in the North and the north Midlands in the 14th c. spreading in the South afterwards but there is no sure proof because often the orthography did not reflect this change. The further development of /a/ + /r/ is controversial. The most accredited hypothesis is that the vowel underwent lengthening to /a:/ in Shakespeare’s time and not much later a [ə] glide developed between /a:/ and /r/. At the end of the 18th c. /a:/ and its allophone [ae] were retracted to /æ/, which is the ModE realisation. under gare: ‘under one’s clothes’, <OE gara, ‘gown’, now obs. The rhyming vowel is /a/.272

196. BY STRETES AND BY STYE / LADY: by stretes and by stye: ‘everywhere’, now obs.273 Style: ‘paths’, <OE stig, now obs274; lady: ‘lady’, see 31. above. For the rhyme, see 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

---

269 OED, haste, n., II.4.a..
270 OED, melody, n., I.1.a..
272 OED, gore, n.2, 12.a..
273 OED, street, n., A.1.1c..
274 OED, † sty, n.1; a..
199. i. NORYSSE: ‘nurse’, also ME nurse <OF nurrice.

199. ii. ABRO / 200. ii. ALSO: Abro: see 57. ABRO above; also: ‘as well’, <OE ealaswa. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ 275

200. i. GOTH: ‘goes’, see 54. GOO above.

201. CHARE / 204. THERE: chare: ‘chariot’, also ME chiare <OF char <Latin carra 276; there: ‘there’, see 181. ΤΕΡ above. The rhyming vowel is /ɛː/.

202. GO / 203. ii. TWO: go: ‘go’, see 54. GOO above; two: ‘two’, <OE twa (feminine and neuter), twegen (masculine; it survived only in modern twain, adj. and n., and tway, adj., arch.). LOE /aː/ was rounded and raised to /ɔː/ both in the Midlands and in the South in the 12th c. and it was spelt <o> but sometimes also <oo, oa, o-e>. In EME the semivowel /w/ was lost when preceded by a consonant ad followed by a back vowel. However, this must have occurred after the semivowel had influenced the vowel provoking the narrowing of EME /ɔː/ to ME /oː/. In the 15th c. it was further narrowed to /uː/, which represents the current pronunciation. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/: 277

203. i. AȝEYN: ‘towards’, <OE ongeagn, prep., now regional and nonstandard, used in OE with dative and accusative. For the development of the vowel, see 78. PLAYNGE. 278

275 OED, also, adv., A.3..
278 OED, again, prep., B.I.1.a.
205. LYLYE FLOUR / 206. ii. EMPEROUR: "lylye flour: 'the flower of the (white) lily', see 29. ii. FLOWRYS above\(^{279}\); emperour: see 25. ii. EMPEROUR. The rhyming vowel is /u:/.

206. i. LYȝTE: 'descended', <OE lihtan – lithe – liht, weak verb of the 3rd class.\(^{280}\)

207. LEDE / 210. STEDE: lede: 'brought', <OE lædan – lædde – læded, weak verb of the 3rd class. LOE /æ:/ underwent fronting and became more close reaching a level between /ɛ:/ and /e:/ in ME. At the beginning of the 18th c., /i:/ was the dialectal variant of educated /ɛ:/, but it gradually replaced the refined vowel, becoming widely accepted by 1750\(^{281}\); stede: 'steed, stallion', now obs., <OE steda, weak masculine noun. LOE /e:/ did not change when entering EME. It underwent narrowing to LME /i:/ in the 15th c., as confirmed by the spelling <i> which started to be used in this period. Later /i:/, which became the current pronunciation, started to be spelt <ie> especially before labiodentals fricatives, whereas <ee> was employed in final position or in closed syllables from ME onwards. The rhyming vowel is /e:/\(^{282}\)

208. RENOWNE / 209. CROWNE: renowne: 'fame', also ME rennon, <Anglo-Norman renoun,\(^{283}\) crowne: 'crown', <Anglo-Norman coroune. Both words entered ME with /u:/ which in LME diphthongized both in native and in loanwords to /ųu/—with a process similar to that involving /iːi/, where the first

\(^{279}\) OED, 'lily-flower, n.
\(^{280}\) OED, light, v.1, II.6.a.
\(^{283}\) OED, renown, n., A.1.a.
element is slightly lower than the second. The spelling was already <ow> as in contemporary English. Between the 16th and the 17th c., the diphthong probably sounded like /əʊ/ and in EModE its first element was retracted to /ʌ/, giving /ʌʊ/ and /ɑʊ/ later at the beginning of the 19th c.. The rhyming vowel is /u:/.

211. FETE / 212. ii. SWETE: fete: ‘feet’, <OE fet, strong masculine noun; swete: ‘sweetly’, <OE swete, adv.. The vowel sound in the two words developed as the vowel in 150. SHENE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

212. i. KLYPPED: ‘embraced’, <OE clyppan – clyppte – clypped, now arch. and dial., weak verb of the 1st class.

213. ȝEDE / 216. REDE: ȝede: ‘went’, see 54. GOO above; rede: ‘read, peruse’, <Old English rædan – rædde – geræd, weak verb of the 3rd class. In Old English the verb is also attested as a strong verb of the 7th class but by ME it had become weak. Possibly, this shift—which occurred very early in ME—was due to the formal and partially semantic association with the verb rede, whose meanings partially overlapped with those of read in the Germanic languages (e.g. Gothic raidjan ‘to establish, to correctly determine, to interpret’). For the development of the vowel, see 207. LEDE / 210. STEDE above.

---

284 The processes involving the two ME long high vowels are presented as parallel from this diphthongization onwards.
286 OED, foot, n., I.1.a.
287 OED, sweet, adv., B.1..
288 OED, clip, v.1, 1.a..
289 OED, read, v., II.5.b.
214. CHERE / 215. IN FERE: chere: ‘expression’, also ME chere <OF chiere, ‘face’, this meaning is now obs.. In the 12th c., OF /ie/ was simplified to /e:/ in loanwords entering ME. For the further development of the vowel see 128. CLERE above; in fere: ‘together’, now obs., <OE gefer, neuter noun. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

217. GRETE / 218. iii. TO METE: grete: ‘great, eminent’, <OE great. LOE /æ/ developed as the vowel in 27. NOME, to mete: ‘to eat, to dinner’, now obs., <OE mæte. For the development of the vowel, see 128. CLERE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

218. i. WESH: ‘washed’, <OE wæscan – wosc – woscon – wæscen, strong verb of the 6th class. The strong forms can be found until the end of the 16th c., when the weak forms started to prevail, but weak forms of the verb had occasionally occurred since the 14th c..


---

291 OED, † fere, n.1, 2.a.
292 OED, great, adj., A.III.12.a..
293 OED, meat, n., I.3.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 865. GRETE / 866. ii. METE, 889. GRETE / 890. ii. METE.
294 OED, wash, v., I.3.a..
295 OED, sit, v., III.18.a..
296 OED, swith, adv., 3..
297 OED, alive, adj., 1.b..
220. i. SEMBELANT: ‘appearance’, also ME samblant <French semblant, now obs..298

220. ii. SWETE / 221. SETE: swete: ‘gracious’, see 212. ii. SWETE above; sete: ‘sat’, see 218. ii. SETEN DON. For the development of the vowel and the rhyme, see 147. BE-TWENE / 150. SHENE.299

222. i. WOMMON: ‘woman’, <OE wifmon. In LOE there was a wave of assimilations, one of which was the regressive assimilation on /fm/ to /mm/, which simplified to /m/ in woman between 1300 and 1400. Long /i/ was shortened when entering EME because of the following two consonants and it became rounded to /ü/ and later /u/ in ME because of its position between /wl/ and /l/. <f> disappeared in ME when in a consonantic cluster (e.g. EME halfpeny > ME halpeny). The vowel developed as in 7. i. MODUR, but as it is preceded by the semivowel /w/, /ʊ/ was not lowered and unrounded to /ʌ/.300

223. ÞOWȝTH / 224. BROWGHT: þowȝth: ‘thought’, see 161. THOWGHT above; browght: ‘brought’, see 82. BROWGHT. For the rhyme, see 82. BROWGHT / 83. ii. WROGHT above.302

225. i. BY-HELDE: ‘contemplated’, <OE bihaldan – biheold – biheoldon – bihalden, strong verb of the 7th class.303

---

298 OED, † semblant, n..
299 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 891. SWETE / 893. SETE.
300 Welna explains that the causes of this shortening are not clear. However, the shortening is a necessary conclusion, as without it the long vowel would have turned into a diphthong because of the Great Vowel Shift.
301 OED, woman, n., I.1.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 56, 62, 156, 170, 176, 213, 234-235. The lowering and unrounding did not occur also when the vowel was followed by <p, b, f>. ME wommon is recorded as a West Midlands and South-West form.
302 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 529. BROWȝT / 530. ÞOWȝT.
225. ii. OFTE SYÞE / 228. WYFE: ofte syþe: ‘oftentimes’, <OE oft, obs.304; wyfe: see 44. ii. WYFE above. For the rhyme and the pronunciation, see 13. ii. FER AND WYDE / 14. SYDE above.

226. i. AN-AMORED: ‘enamoured’, also ME anamoured <OF enamourer.305

226. ii. ÞOW ÞOWTUR: ‘daughter’, see 109. ii. DOWÝTER.

226. iii. TYLLE / 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE: tylle: ‘of’, <OE til, now dial.. /i/ remained unchanged when entering EME and it was lowered later throughout ME reaching EModE /t/, the current realisation306; to worche hys wylle: ‘if it be his good pleasure’, for to worche see 83. ii. WROGHT; wylle ‘will’, <OE willa, weak masculine noun. The rhyming vowel is /i/.307

229. i. METEWHYLE: ‘the time taken by a meal’, <OE mæte (see 218. iii. TO METE) + <OE hwil (see 79. WHYLE).308

229. ii. DON / 230. SON: don: ‘done, finished’, see 4. iii. TO DONE above309; son: ‘soon’, <OE sona. ME /o:/ was raised to /u:/ which remains until today. The rhyming vowel is /o:/.310

231. NERE / 234. CLERE: nere: ‘close at hand’, also ME ner. For the vowel, see 181. ÞER above311; clere: ‘bright’, see 128. CLERE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/312

303 OED, behold, v., I.7.a..
304 OED, often, adv., C1†..
305 OED, enamoured, adj., 1..
307 OED, will, n.1, II.8..
309 OED, do, v., 1.a..
232. COME / 234. ROME: come: ‘come back’, <OE cuiman – com – common – cumen, strong verb of the 4th class. The spelling with <o> for <u> in the present stem was a scribal habit before m, n, u (v) introduced in the 13th c.

The other spelling cum was used until the 17th c. but eventually was superseded by come, as shown by similar examples as some, son, tongue, love, etc.. Similarly, the past participle cumen is recorded up to the 17th c., but eventually comen prevailed. It started to lose final -n in the 13th c., and was levelled after the infinitive come. Between the 16th and the 17th c. there was a strong tendency of turning it into a weak verb, thus resulting in comed for the past participle but the strong form continued and continues nevertheless to the present. For the development of the vowel and the rhyme, see 27. NOME / 30. NONE.313

235. WENTE / 236. ii. COMMANDEMENT: wente: ‘went’, see 81. WENDE; commandement: ‘order, injunction’, <OF commandement <Latin commandamentum. For the rhyme, see 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.314

236. i. DURSTE: ‘dared’, < OE durran – dorste – durst. A preterite-present verb of the 3rd class. The original construction with the infinitive without to is still in use as well as the negative he dares not, but the intransitive forms with to are equally accepted. The forms dares, dared first appeared in the 16th c. and were used in the South in the transitive senses—which developed in the same

---

311 OED, near, adv., 2..
312 OED, clear, adj., A.I.4.d..
313 OED, come, v., I.1.b..
314 OED, commandment, n., 1.a..
period—and only after 1600 also in the original intransitive senses when followed by to.\textsuperscript{315}

\textbf{237. FERE / 240. DERE:} \text.cap{fere}: ‘travel’, now arch. or poet., <OE faran – for – foron – faren, strong verb of the 6\textsuperscript{th} class. Initially, the verb existed both in the strong and in the weak conjugation. The weak \text.cap{fere} also existed in other Germanic languages but with a transitive sense meaning ‘to carry’. This verb became obsolete in the present tense in the 14\textsuperscript{th} c., but the past tense and participle \text.cap{ferd} continued to serve the verb \text.cap{fare} in its inflection. So the irregular weak form produced \text.cap{fare} – \text.cap{ferd}, which was regularised before 1500 to \text.cap{fare} – \text.cap{fared}, and the strong past tense died out by the 16\textsuperscript{th} c.\textsuperscript{316}; \text.cap{dere}: ‘there’, a different orthography for \text.cap{per} (see 181. P\textsuperscript{ER}). For the development of the vowel and the rhyme, see 181. P\textsuperscript{ER} / 182. WER.\textsuperscript{317}

\textbf{238. ROME / 239. SONE:} \text.cap{sone}: ‘soon’, see 230. SON above. For the rhyme, see 27. NOME / 30. NONE.\textsuperscript{318}

\textbf{239. i. POPUS BULLUS:} ‘Papal Bull’, also ME bulle <Latin bulla.\textsuperscript{319}

\textbf{241. BLY\textcap{PE} / 242. ii. SWY\textcap{PE}:} \text.cap{blype}: ‘mirthful’, <OE bli\textcap{de}\textsuperscript{320}; \text.cap{swybe}: ‘rapidly’, see 219. SWYDE above. For the rhyme and the pronunciation, see 13. ii. FER AND WYDE / 14. SYDE above.

\textsuperscript{315} OED, dare, v.\textsuperscript{1}, I.1.a.\textsuperscript{.}
\textsuperscript{316} OED, fare, v.\textsuperscript{1}, I.2.†a.\textsuperscript{.}
\textsuperscript{317} OED, there, adv., I."1.a.\textsuperscript{.}
\textsuperscript{318} The same rhyme occurs in ll. 958. SONE / 959. ROME.
\textsuperscript{319} OED, bull, n.\textsuperscript{2}, 1.\textsuperscript{.}
\textsuperscript{320} OED, blithe, adj., A.2.a.\textsuperscript{.}
242. **LETTE SHAPE A ROBE:** ‘had a robe shaped’, <OE lætan – le – leton – gelæten, strong verb of the 7th class. Here employed in causative use.⁴²¹

243. **GOLDE / 246. MARKED WAS OF MOLDE:** golde: ‘gold’, <OE gold, a strong neuter noun. EOE /o/ in a + /ld/ context was lengthened in LOE. When entering ME it did not undergo any change and in LME the presence of a labial followed by a consonant resulted in the rise of the diphthong /au/, which was sometimes spelt as <ou, ow> until the 16th c.. In ModE this sound is not always reflected in the spelling, as many words are now spelt with <o>. The further development of the LME diphthong to /au/ is rather complicated. One hypothesis is that there was regressive assimilation, thus the second element was lowered getting closer to the first before /ɔ:/ was narrowed to /oː/. On the other hand, /oː/ is supposed to have been the merger between /au/ and /aʊ/. Consequently, the uncertainty about the precise development of the diphthong leads to the conclusion that during the three centuries stretching from LME to EModE there were many parallel forms. Eventually the diphthong lowered and centralized to /au/. The final realisation was accepted generally at the beginning of the 19th c.⁴²²; marked was of molde: ‘was made of mould’, <OE mearcian – mearcode – gemearcod, ‘to put a mark on’, weak verb of the 2nd class.⁴²³ Molde: <OE molde, ‘loose, broken earth’. The two words share the development of the vowel and the rhyming vowel is /oː/.⁴²⁴

---

⁴²² OED, gold, n.¹, 1.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 39, 101-102, 193, 197, 244.
⁴²³ OED, mark, v.; MED, 15(a).
⁴²⁴ OED mould | mold, n.¹, 1.a.
244. HYT WAS DON HER UPON / 245. ii. WOMMON: hyt was don her upon: ‘it was placed on her’, <OE don, see 4. iii. TO DONE325, wommon: ‘woman’, see 222. i. WOMMON. For the rhyme, see 4. iii. TO DONE / 5. iii. WONE above.

245. i. ERþELY: ‘terrestrial, human’, <OE eorþlic.326

247. FRE / 248. ii. ÞE: fre: ‘frankly’, for the etymology see 10. FRE327; þe: ‘you’, see 46. ii. ÞE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/328

248. i. WOLLE: ‘will’, <OE willan – wille (3rd person singular without -þ) – wolde, anomalous verb. The current negative form won’t derives from the preterite of the verb. As previously discussed in 3. i. SHALLE, the verb acquired auxiliary function in the formation of the future tense. In this function, will was typical of popular speech. However the first meaning attributed to it was volition, a sense which connotated for a long time its auxiliary use in the future and explains why shall became a pure futurity auxiliary earlier than will.329

249. BE-HOLDE / 252. SHULDE: be-holde: ‘contemplate’, see 225. i. BY-HELDE. In EOE /æld/ was lengthened to LOE /əːld/ and subsequently the vowel shared the development of the one in 54. GOO330, shulde: preterite of 3. i. SHALLE. Similarly to what occurred to /æld/ in be-holde, EOE /æld/ was lengthened to LOE /əːld/ and reached EME unchanged. Later in LME it was turned into /uː/, the realisation which survived into ModE. As for the labial, it

325 OED, do, v., PV2, to do on.
326 OED, earthly, adj., A.1.a..
327 OED, free, adv., C.1..
328 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 963. FRE / 966. ÞE, 979. FRE / 980. THE.
developed as in 13. i. WALKEN and was already lost in LME. The two words do not rhyme.331

250. UNBUR WEDE / 251. GOD OF HEUEN HYT FOR-BEDE:; unbur wede: used as a mere rhyme tag, <OE wæd, feminine noun, ‘a garment’. The vowel developed as the one in 150. SHENE332; God of heuen hyt for-beDE: ‘God forbid’, <OE forbeodan – forbead – forbuden – forbidden, strong verb of the 2nd class. The vowel developed as EME /e:/ in 87. iii. KNE. In ME the infinitive form forbidde appeared and from here the vowel subsequently developed to LME /i:/ which was slightly centralised to /ɪ/ in EModE and remains today. The rhyming vowel is /e:/333

253. i. ȢF: ‘if’, <OE gif ‘in the case that’ 334

253. ii. BE-TYDDE: ‘happened’, <OE betidan, weak verb of the 1st class, mostly impersonal or in the 3rd person singular, used with be in perfect tenses, now arch.335

253. iii. WEDDE / 254. BEDDE: wedde: ‘marry’, <OE weddian – weddode – geweddod, weak verb of the 2nd class. The past tense wed is now only dialectal and common dialectal in the past participle336; bedde: ‘marriage bed’, <OE bedd, neuter noun. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/337

334 OED, if, conj., A.l.1.a..
335 OED, betide, v., 1.a..
336 OED, wed, v., 3.a..
337 OED, bed, n., l.1.b.
<OE forleosan – forleas – forluron – forloren, strong verb of the 2nd class, after 
the 15th c. it is found only in the past participle. Now obs. in this meaning338, 
borne: ‘born’, see 49. BORN above. For the development of the vowel and the 
rhyme, see 49. BORN / 50. BORNE above.

256. i. SPRYNGE: ‘spread’, <OE springan – sprang – sprungon – sprungen, 
strong verb of the 3rd class.339

259. i. BEN: ‘are’, see 11. BE. This is not an instance of omission of auxiliary 
have in periphrastic tenses, attested from the end of the 15th c. onwards, but a 
regional plural variant of the verb be (also beop, beb) used until the 14th c. in the 
Midlands and in the South, later only in the South and in the West. It is a reflex 
of OE beo- as ME singular forms best (2nd person) and beth (3rd person), 
deriving from the same root.340

259. ii. PRYCE / 260. A-RYCE: pryce: ‘value’, see 92. PRYS341; a-ryce: 
LOE /i:/ reached EME unchanged. Subsequently the vowel developed as in 6. 
LYGHTE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/342

338 OED, † for lese, v., 2.c.
339 OED, spring, v.†, t.†2.a..
340 OED, be, v.. 
341 OED, price, v., II.3.†b.. 
261. TAKE GOD 3OU BE-FORNE / 264. i. PHORNE: take God 3ou be-forne:
‘take God’s guidance’, see 163. BY-FORN above\textsuperscript{343}; bhorne: ‘thorn’, <OE ðorn.
For the vowel and the rhyme, see 163. BY-FORN / 164. UNYKORN above.\textsuperscript{344}

262. ME / 263. SE: me: ‘me’, see 175. ii. ME above; se: ‘see’, see 93. SE. The vowel development is discussed in 87. iii. KNE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.\textsuperscript{345}

264. ii. WERED: ‘wore’, <OE werian – werede – wered, weak verb of the 1\textsuperscript{st} class. Starting from the 14\textsuperscript{th} c., the verb slowly shifted to the strong declension by analogy with verbs as swear, bear, tear, although becoming of common use only after the 16\textsuperscript{th} c..\textsuperscript{346}

265. WROTHE / 266. OTHE: wrothe: ‘irate’, <OE wræþ. The semivowel was lost in the pronunciation in the cluster /wr-/ in EModE\textsuperscript{347}; othe: ‘oath’, <OE að. The vowel developed as in 54. GOO. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ/.\textsuperscript{348}

267. BE / 270. BLE: be: ‘be’, see 11. BE above; ble: ‘blue’, <OF bleu. The vowel developed similarly to the one in 152. VERTUES. Here The rhyming vowel is /e:/\textsuperscript{349}

268. BOOT / 269. i. WOTE: boot: ‘boat’, <OE bat. LOE /ɑ:/ was rounded and raised to /ɔ:/ in EME, represented by the spellings <o, oo, oa, o-e>. Later, in ME a u glide appeared after /ɔ/, which led to /ou/ but the monophthongal variant /ɔ:/ also existed (see 243. GOLDE). In EModE, /ɔ:/ was narrowed to /ɔ:/ before the

\textsuperscript{343} OED, god, n., III.\textsuperscript{19}.c..
\textsuperscript{344} OED, thorn, n., l.1..
\textsuperscript{345} The same rhyme occurs in ll. 766. ME / 767. SE.
\textsuperscript{346} OED, wear, v., l.4.a..
\textsuperscript{348} OED, oath, n., 1.a..
\textsuperscript{349} OED, blue, adj., 1.
monophthongization of /ou/ to /ɔː/, as the phonemes did not merge. The vowel was spelled <oa> by analogy with <ea> used for /ɛː/. At the beginning of the 19th c., it was diphthongized to /ou/ and in the 20th the first element was centralised to /ə/.350, wote: ‘knows’, a variant of wit (see 153. i. TO WYTE), the result of the preterite-present stem wot, wat in other forms of the verb, a process which initially involved the 2nd person singular (wat and wot for wast and wost) and the present tense plural (replacing witen) starting from the 13th c. in the North. Subsequently the forms woten for the infinitive, wotest and woteth for the 2nd and 3rd person of the present tense and the present participle wotting appeared between the 15th and the 16th c.. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/.351

269. DEDE: ‘put’, <OE don, see 4. iii. TO DONE. Dede <dyde is a dialectal variant derived from the original strong verb: in fact the vowel in the past tense dyde is explained as a special OE representation of an Indogermanic weak vowel.352


273. i. SHATE: ‘sent’, <OE sceotan – sceat – scuton – scoten, strong verb of the 2nd class. The origin of the modern shoot is not clear and probably mixed. On the one hand it might be a shortened form from the 14th c. weak form schotte. On the other it may come from the past participle schotten. In the

351 OED, wit, v.1, 1..
352 OED, do, v.
353 OED, spending, n.1, 2.a.↑2..
infinitive, LOE /ə:/ reached EME unchanged. Subsequently, it developed as the vowel in 2. MONE.\(^{354}\)

273. ii. SE / 276. PYTE: se: ‘see’, see 93. SE; pyte: ‘pity’, also ME pitee <Anglo-Norman pite. The word entered ME with /i/ and was later lowered in the 16th c., reaching with /ɪ/ its current pronunciation. The rhyming vowel is /eː/.\(^{355}\)

274. BORE / 275. ORE: bore: ‘there’, see 181. BER; ore: ‘oar’, <OE ar. The vowel developed as the one in 60. MOO. The rhyming vowel is /əː/.\(^{356}\)

277. UNDERSTONDE / 278. ii. LONDE: understonde: ‘understand’, <OE understandan – understod – understodon – understood, strong verb of the 6th class. For the development of the vowel, see 116. STONDE; londe: ‘land’, see 15. ii. LONDE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/.\(^{357}\)

278. i. BLEWE: ‘carried away’, <OE blawan – bleow – bleowon – blawen, strong verb of the 7th class. For the /eow/ monophthongization process, see 59. SEWE.\(^{359}\)


280. i. HYM: ‘himself’, see 87. ii. HYM.

---


\(^{356}\) OED, oar, n., 1.a..

\(^{357}\) OED, under stand, v., l.4.b..

\(^{358}\) OED, blow, v.1, l.****12.a..

\(^{359}\) The same rhyme occurs in ll. 337. LOND / 338. UN̂URSTOND, 352. SOND / 353. UN̂URSTOND, 421. UN̂URSTONDE / 422. LONDE.
280. ii. BE-ÞOWGHT / 281. MYSWROWHT: be-bowght: ‘considered’, <OE beþencan – beþohte – beþoht, weak verb of the 1st class. The OE past tense and past participle lost postvocalic /n/ of the present so that /ɔ/ underwent compensatory lengthening between LOE and ME. For the development of the vowel, see 161. THOWGHT, mysrowht: ‘done amiss’. For the etymology of the verb and the phonological development, see 83. ii. WROGHT. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/.

283. STUDYNYNGE / 284. SOWENYNGE: studyynge: ‘meditation’, also ME stoding <studie <OF estudier, sowenynge: ‘in a swoon’, also ME swoȝning <swoȝene. The vowel in the two words developed as the one in 40.ÞYNG. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/.

285. i. YRÞE: ‘earth, ground’, <OE eorðe, weak feminine noun.

285. ii. DYGHTE / 288. FAYR AND RYGHT: dyght: ‘fallen’, for the etymology of the verb, see 3. iii. DYGHTE above; fayr and ryght: ‘indeed’, for the etymology, see 86. RYGHT. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

286. ÞER-BY / 287. HASTYLY: per-by: ‘near that’, <OE þærbi, see 181. ÞER and 159. BY above; hastily: ‘in haste, without delay’. In the suffix -ly, OE /i:/ was shortened to /i/ in EME. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/.

---

360 OED, think, v.2, II.8.a..
361 OED, † miswork, v., 2..
362 OED, studying, n., I.2.a..
363 OED, swoȝning, n., 1..
364 OED, earth, n., I.2..
365 MED, dighten (v.), 5.
366 OED, right, adv., III.11.a..
367 OED, thereby, adv., 2.a.
289. i. KOUERED: ‘recovered’, <OF couvrer <recouvrer <Latin recuperare.\textsuperscript{369}

289. ii. WAS / 290. ALAS: was: ‘was’, see 121. WAS; alas: ‘alas’, <Anglo-Norman allas. The rhyming vowel is /a/.\textsuperscript{370}

291. DERE / 294. LERE: dere: ‘dear’, <OE deore. EME /e:/ is the result of the monophthongisation of OE /e:o/ > LOE /ö:/, which was narrowed to /i:/ in the 15th c. When in a +/r/ context, a [ə] glide appeared in the 16th c. and [ıə] became a full phoneme after postvocalic /r/ was eventually dropped in the 17th c.; lere: ‘face’, <OE hleor ‘cheek’, neuter noun, now obs. The vowel developed as in DERE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/./\textsuperscript{371}

292. MAN / 293. ii. AM: man: ‘man’, see 37. MANNE; am: 1st person singular of the verb to be, <OE, eom, eam. The rhyming vowel is /a/.\textsuperscript{372}

293 i. KAYTYF: ‘miserable’, <Old Northern French caitif <Latin captivum.\textsuperscript{374}

295 i. AȞEYN: ‘against’, see 203. i. AȞEYN above.

295. ii. LAY / 296. TREWE OF FAY: lay: ‘law’, <LOE lagu, strong feminine. When followed by a back vowel, LOE [ɔy] became first /aw/ and later /au/. The later development of the vowel is discussed in 58. i. THAW\textsuperscript{375}; trewe of fay: ‘faithful to religion’, see also 123. TREWE above. Fay: <OF feid, feit <Latin

\textsuperscript{368} OED, hastily, adv. 1.: WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 62-64. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 781. BY / 782. HASTYLY.

\textsuperscript{369} OED, recover, v.1., 4.

\textsuperscript{370} The same rhyme occurs in ll. 556. ALAS / 557. WAS, 772. ALAS / 773. WAS.


\textsuperscript{372} OED, † leer, n.1., 2..

\textsuperscript{373} OED, be, v., I.1.a..

\textsuperscript{374} OED, caitiff, adj. B.†2..

\textsuperscript{375} OED, law, n.†, I.***9.a..
The OF diphthongs /ai/ and /ei/ merged into /ɛi/ or /æi/, which coalesced with native /ei/ into /ai/. The further development of the vowel is discussed in 78.

PLAYNGE. As for final fricative /θ/, it might be analogical to ME truth or expresses an Old Western French phoneme, which still existed in the 11th c.. Therefore the spellings <d> or <t> in French may have been actually realised as a dental fricative. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/.

297. i. NER: ‘were’, negative form of the verb were, formed by the agglutinant particles na-, ne-. See 182. WER above.

297. ii. HERE / 300. CHERE: here: ‘here’, <OE her, /e:/ remained unchanged when entering EME and it subsequently developed as in 291. DERE above, chere: see 214. CHERE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

298. i. LASHED OUT: ‘poured out’, past tense also ME last. Lash is a verb of difficult etymology, maybe of onomatopoetic origin, as the parallel and almost synonymous lush which appeared in the same period. Some of its senses are very similar to French lâcher.

298. ii. YȝEN / 299. SYȝEN: yȝen: ‘eyes’, <OE eage, weak neuter noun. The first instance of the plural in -s can be found in 1375. EOE /e:/ + /ȝ/ resulted in LOE /ej/, with the semivowel /j/ deriving from the vocalisation of the post-vocalic palatal consonant .This is connected to the shift in syllable boundaries occurring at the time, which brought to the combination of the vowel with the

---

378 OED, here, adv., A.1.a..
379 OED, lash, v.'1, l.1..
semivowel. In the passage to EME, when a vowel followed the cluster /e:j/, it tended to become a monophthong, as shown in the sequence /e:je/ > /e:ije/ > /i:iel/ > /i:e/ > /i:ø/ > /i:/ (end of the 13th c.). The spelling <i, y> is attested already in the 12th c.. This process started in the South and spread northwards to central Midlands, since in the North /a/ was early lost. For the further development of the vowel, see 110. WYTH-OUTEN LEES above; syzen: ‘saw’, plural form of the preterite of the verb to see (see 68. SYE). The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

301. ȜYNGE / 302. i. WEPYNGE: Ȝynge: ‘young’, see 41. ȜYNGE above; wepyng: ‘weeping’, <OE wepan – weop – weopon – geweopen, a strong verb of the 7th class. It started to be conjugated as a weak verb in the 13th c. and shifting finally to the weak declension in the 14th. For the rhyme, see 40. ȜYNG / 41. ȜYNGE.


303. KELLE / 306. FLESH AND FELLE: kelle: ‘cloak’, a northern form of ME calle <French cale. ME /a/ +/l/ developed a transition glide /u/ which led to the diphthong /au/ in the 15th c., represented by <aul> soon simplified to <al>. caul is one of the rare words where the earlier spelling survived. Later in the 16th century, the first element of the diphthong was retracted to /o/. For the further

---

380 For instance, the earlier division of the word blowan was blow-an. In LOE it became blow-an.
381 OED, eye, n.1, l.1.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 50; 120-121.
382 OED, weep, v., l.1.a.. The same rhyme occurs in 610. ȜYNGE / 611. WEPYNGE.
383 OED, stint, v., l.†7.a..
development of the vowel, see 58. i. THAW3TH above\textsuperscript{384}; flesh and felle: ‘skin’, <OE fel, strong neuter noun. The rhyme here rests on /ɛː/.\textsuperscript{385}

304. PRYNGE / 305. YNGE: brynge: ‘throng, crowd’, <OE bringan – prang – prungon – prungen, now obs. except dialectally, strong verb of the 3\textsuperscript{rd} class. The vowel development is discussed in 24. i. SONGE above\textsuperscript{386}; ynge: ‘young’, see 41. YNGE above. For the rhyme, see 40. PYN / 41. YNGE.

307. SEE / 308. FRE: see: ‘sea’, <OE sæ. LOE /æː/ became slightly more close in EME, reaching the level of /ɛː/, represented by <e, ea>. /ɛː/ continued throughout ME and LME and between the 16\textsuperscript{th} and the 17\textsuperscript{th} century the more colloquial /iː/ replaced the /ɛː/ of the formal style. The final pronunciation was widely accepted after 1750\textsuperscript{387}; fre: ‘innocent’, see 10. FRE. The rhyming vowel is /ɛː/.\textsuperscript{388}

309. SNELLE / 312. TELLE: snelle: ‘quickly’, <OE snel\textsuperscript{389}; telle: ‘tell’, for the etymology and the development of the vowel see 20. ii. TELLE. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ/.

313. i. FLETED: ‘floated’, <OE flotian – flotode – geflotod, weak verb of the 2\textsuperscript{nd} class.\textsuperscript{390}

313. ii. A-LONE / 314. MONE: a-lone: ‘alone’, also ME al-an. It was originally a phrase with the adverb all intensifying the adjective one; written as a single

\textsuperscript{384} OED, kell, n., 2..
\textsuperscript{385} OED, fell, n.\textsuperscript{1}, 2.a..
\textsuperscript{386} OED, † thring, n.\textsuperscript{1}, †1.a..
\textsuperscript{388} OED, free, adj., A.1I.8..
\textsuperscript{389} OED, snell, adv., B.1..
\textsuperscript{390} OED, float, v., I.1.b..
word since 1450. The phonological development of the word differs from that of its constituting words: the first syllable shows that the vowel in all developed in the same way as it was realised in an unstressed context and one shows that it developed as ME /ɔ:/ (see discussion under 1. iv. TRONE / 2. MONE) and not as /ɔ:/ in one (see 30. NONE and notes)\(^{391}\); mone: ‘prayer, request’, of uncertain origin, probably related to OE verb mænan ‘to complain, lament’. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/\(^{392}\).

315. ALSO / 318. BLO: also: ‘also’, <OE eallswa. The semivowel was active in the narrowing of EME /ɔ:/ to /o:/ but this did not affect also because /w/ was lost when preceded by a consonant (mostly /s/) and followed by a back vowel. The later development of the vowel is discussed in 268. BOOT\(^{393}\); blo: ‘blue’, see 270. BLE above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/.

316. RAYN / 317. A-GAYN: rayn: ‘rain’, <LOE rein. LOE /eːj/ became /ei/ in EME and then the first element of the diphthong became more open, reaching the level of /ai/ early in the 14\(^{th}\) c.. For the further development of the vowel, see 27. NOME above\(^{394}\); a-gayn: ‘against’, see 203. 1. A$EYN. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/.

319. SAWE / 322. WAWE: sawe: ‘story, tale’, <OE sagu, strong feminine noun\(^{395}\); wawe: ‘wave’, the development of the vowel is discussed in 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /a:/\(^{396}\).

\(^{391}\) OED, alone, adv., A.1.a.(a).
\(^{392}\) OED, moan, n., 1†b.
\(^{395}\) OED, saw, n.\(^{2}\), 12..
320. i. **Hows**: ‘house’, <OE *hus*, strong neuter noun.

320. ii. **Knowe / Lowe**: knowe: ‘know, perceive’, <OE *cnawan* – *cnew* – *cnewon* – *gecnawan*, strong verb of the 7th class. The meaning of the verb partly overlapped with *wit* v. (see 153. i. TO WYTE above) and with the etymologically related *can* v., which became a modal (see 42. KOWTH) and *ken* v. ‘to make known, confess’, now obs. and current only in Scots. Weak forms of the verb were frequent in usage between the 15th and the 18th century but did not supersede the strong ones. For the vowel development, see 59. SEWE above. The development of the /kn-/ cluster is discussed in 85. ii. KNYढ़।

low: ‘low’, also ME *lage*. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/.

321. i. **A-Ferd**: ‘afraid’, <OE *æfæred*, now regional and nonstandard. The word was superseded by *afraid* in the 18th c..

321. ii. **Go / Woo**: go: ‘go’, see 54. GOO; woo: ‘distressed’, <OE *wa*, now obs. exc. in Scots and northern dialects. For the rhyme, see 51. ḋOО / 54. GOO.

325. ḋORE / 326. **More**: bore: ‘there’, see 181. ḋER; more: see 60. MOO above. For the rhyme see 274. ḋORE / 275. ORE.

327. **Wylle / Styllle**: wylle: see wylle at 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE; styllle: ‘still’, <OE *stille*. LOE /i/ continued unchanged throughout ME

---

396 OED, *wave*, n., l.1.a..
397 OED, *house*, n., l.1.a..
398 OED, *know*, v., l.1.a.;
399 OED, *low*, adj., l.1.a..
400 OED, *afeared*, adj., l.1.a..
401 OED, *woe*, adv., A.II.3.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 637. WOO / 638. GO.
402 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 673. THORE / 674. MORE.
and it became slightly more centralised and more open in LME, reaching its current pronunciation on the level of /ɪ/. The rhyme here rests on /ɪ/.403

328. i. CAREFULLE: ‘full of grief, sorrowful’, <OE carful <caru ‘care’.404

328. ii. SYKYNG: ‘sighing’, <OE sican – sac – sicon – gesicen, strong verb of the 1st class, in ME it shifted to the 3rd class of the weak declension, now obs.405

328. iii. SORE / 329. ii. ȜORE: sore: ‘pain’, <OE sar, strong neuter noun, now obs. The vowel development is discussed in 60. MOO406, Ȝore: ‘soon’, <OE geara, now obs.. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ/.407

329. i. ȜARKED: ‘ordained’, <OE gearcian – gearcode – gearcod, weak verb of the 2nd class, now obs..408

332. i. THOROW: ‘through’, <OE buruh, a disyllabic development of burh prep. and adv. paralleled in borough (burh), furrow (furh), borrow (borh), sorrow (sorh), etc.. The two OE words shared the meaning of ‘from side to side’ but being burh chiefly a preposition—thus stressless and proclitic—it is now represented by the monosyllabic through continuing in ModE as a preposition and adverb. From buruh derived thorough, today adjective and archaic noun.409

403 OED, still, adv., 2.2.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 82, 213. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 675. WYLLE / 678. STYLLLE.
404 OED, careful, adj., †1..
405 OED, sike, v., 1.a..
406 OED, sore, n., †16.
407 OED, yare, adv., †1.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 676. SORE / 677. ȜORE.
408 OED, † yark, v., c..
409 OED, thorough, prep., l.1.a..
TYLLE / 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE.\textsuperscript{411}

334. HARDE BE-STADDE / 335. MADDE: be-stadde: ‘hard put to it’, <Old Norse staddr, past participle of the verb stedja, ‘to stop, place’\textsuperscript{412}; madde: ‘insane, mad’, <OE gemæd. In EME /æ:/ was shortened when before geminates and reached the level of /a/, which remained until the 16\textsuperscript{th} c., when it went back to /æ/ which remains to the present. For the rhyme see 37. MANNE / 38. ÞANNE.\textsuperscript{413}

336. i. WORTH: ‘equivalent in power to’, <OE weorþ, worþ, wurþ.\textsuperscript{414}

336. ii. WEDERUS: ‘weather’, <OE weder, neuter noun. The spelling with <th> is first recorded in the 15\textsuperscript{th} c. and generalised to all areas in the following century; the pronunciation with [ð] may be much older.\textsuperscript{415}

339. COUNTRE / 342. HE: countre: ‘country’, <OF cuntrée, contrée. The vowel entered English with ME /u/ and without shifting its stress. Subsequently the vowel developed as in 7. i. MODUR\textsuperscript{416}; he: ‘he’, <OE hi, a form which is also at the base of words as him, his, hit, hem, here, hence. 3\textsuperscript{rd} pers. sing. pronoun, nominative. When the 1\textsuperscript{st} and the 2\textsuperscript{nd} person singular accusative and dative

\textsuperscript{410} OED, fulfil, v., 6.a.
\textsuperscript{411} OED, ill, adj., A.4. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 681. FULFYLLE / 684. ii. YLLE.
\textsuperscript{412} OED, bested | bestead, adj., 5.a.
\textsuperscript{413} OED, mad, adj., 4.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 68, 213. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 682. BE-STADDE / 683. MADDE.
\textsuperscript{414} KURATH, H., KUHN, S.M. (eds.), (1956): vol. 13-II, p. 923, worth, quasi-prep., 3(b); OED.
\textsuperscript{415} OED, weather, n., 1.a.(a).
forms had already merged (see 2. i. ÞOU), the 3rd person forms retained separate forms longer, in particular in the South. The rhyming vowel is /e/.417

340. BY-SYDE / 341. PRYDE: by-syde: ‘by the side’, <OE be sidan, now lit. and obs.418; pryde: ‘pryde’, see 111. ii. PRYDE. For the rhyme and the development of the vowel, see 111. ii. PRYDE / 114. ii. A SYDE above.

345. SEE / 348. THE WEDUR WAS LYTHE OF LE: see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE above; the wedur was lythe of le: ‘the weather was fine, peaceful’. Lythe ‘calm, serene’, <OE liðe, now obs.419; le ‘sheltered position, tranquillity’, <OE hleo, strong neuter or masculine. The vowel development is discussed in 87. ii. KNE. For the rhyme, see 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above.420

346. EYR / 347. FAYR: ‘air’, <Anglo-Norman and OF aire <classical Latin aer. The French diphthong /ai/ and /ei/ merged as /ɛi/ and later the first element reached the level of ME /a/, spelt <ai> or <ay> but also <ei, ey>, a merely historical spelling standing for a low vowel. As for the shift from ME /ai/ to LME /æ:/ there are two main hypotheses: either that at the end of the 15th c. /ai/ and /a:/ coalesced at the level of /æ:/ - /æi/ or the process taking /ai/ to /æi/ and eventually to /æ:/ was located in the north Midlands and in the North, whereas in the South and south Midlands the diphthong was slightly raised to /ei/ in the 18th c.. Both hypotheses are acceptable; probably monophthongal forms were common in the speech of the lower classes and diphthongal realisations were

---

418 OED, beside adv., A.1.f.a..
419 OED, lithe, adj., 2.1b..
420 OED, lee, n., †3..
used by cultivated speakers. Subsequently the vowel developed as in 181. 

`PER`\(^{421}\), `fayr`: ‘equitable’, <OE `fæger`. The rhyming diphthong is `/ai/`.\(^{422}\)

349. BRYM / 350. `PER-YN`: brym: ‘coast’, also ME brymme, of uncertain etymology\(^{423}\); per-yn: ‘in that place’, <OE pærin now formal, arch. or obs. The rhyme here rests on `/1/`.\(^{424}\)


355. i. METELES: ‘without food’, see 218. iii. TO METE.

356. i. HYM `POWTH GRET DELE`: ‘it seemed to him striking, moving’ <OE pencan – pohte – poht, weak verb of the 1st class, see 280. ii. BE-`POWGH` above.\(^{426}\)

357. DYE / 360. EGARE: dye: see 53. ii. DYE; Egarè: the fictitious name which Emaré give herself to conceal her real identity. The two words do not rhyme.

358. NAME / 359. A-NONE: name: ‘name’, see 27. NOME; a-none: ‘at once’, <OE on ‘into one’, now obs.. The rhyming vowel is `/ɔ:/` as in 27. NOME / 30. NONE.\(^{427}\)

\(^{421}\) OED, air, n.\(^{1}\), l.1.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 129, 190-191, 
\(^{422}\) OED, fair, adj, A.III.10.a.. 
\(^{423}\) OED, brim, n., l.†1.a.. 
\(^{424}\) The same rhyme occurs in ll. 694. BRYMME / 695. THER-YNNE. 
\(^{425}\) OED, ferly, n., B.2.. 
\(^{426}\) OED, think, v.2, III.13.td.. The meaning of *gret dele*—here used as an adverb—has been deduced from the context as no meaning from the OED was suitable and the pages relative to dele in the *Middle English Dictionary* by KURATH, H., KUHN, S.M. (eds.), (1956) are in part missing. 
\(^{427}\) OED, anon, adv., †4.a..
361. PYTE / 362. SEE: pyte: ‘pity’, see 276. PYTE; see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 273. ii. SE / 276. PYTE.

363. LEDE / 366. UNPUR WEDE: lede: ‘led’, see 207. LEDE; unpur wede: used as a mere rhyme tag, see 250. UNPUR WEDE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

364. BE / 365. iii. TRE: be: ‘been’, see 11. BE; tre: ‘tree’, <OE treow. The development of the vowel is discussed in 10. FRE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

365. i. WAX: ‘become, turned’, <OE weaxan – weox – weoxon – weaxen, strong verb of the 7th class. The strong past tense became rare after the 14th c. and the verb shifted to the weak declension in LME, since. For the development of the vowel, see 121. WAS above.


367. CAME / 368. NAM: came: ‘came’, for the verb see 232. COME. Came should belong to the number of words where LOE /a/ was lengthened to /a:/ in an open syllable but the vowel is in fact obscure in origin. Welna lists both long and short vowels as possible influences (e. g. Old Norse kvam and northern cam for the short vowel, plural present tense camen and plural past tense comen for the long vowel). Subsequently the vowel developed as in 27. NOME, nam: ‘took’, <OE niman – nom – numon – genumen, strong verb of the 4th class, now obs. and regional. Niman corresponded to the senses of the Scandinavian loanword take and remained in common use until the 15th c.

---

428 OED, tree, n. 1.a..
429 OED, wax, v. ii.9.a.(b).
430 OED, lean, adj., A.1.a..
the following century it disappeared temporarily to reappear later in the 17\textsuperscript{th} as a colloquial word meaning 'to steal'. The rhyming vowel is /aː/.\textsuperscript{432}

369. FEDE / 372. STEDE: fede: ‘feed’, <OE fedan – fedde – fedde, weak verb of the 1\textsuperscript{st} class. The development of the vowel is discussed in 210. STEDE\textsuperscript{433}; stede: ‘in that place, in the chamber’ now obs., <OE stede, masculine noun. The vowel development is discussed in 6. ii. HEUEN. The rhyming vowel is /eː/.\textsuperscript{434}

370. DRYNKE / 371. HEM ON YNKE: drynke: ‘drink’, see 272. DRYNKE; hem on ynke: ‘call to their mind’, for the etymology of the verb see 356. i. POWTH above. The rhyming vowel is /t/ as in 40. YNG / 41. YNGE.\textsuperscript{435}

373. FACE / 374. WAS: face: ‘face’, <Anglo-Norman and OF face <post-classical Latin facia. The vowel development is discussed in 27. NOME\textsuperscript{436}; was: see 121. WAS. The rhyming vowel is /aː/.

374. KEUERED: ‘covered’, <OF cuvrir, see 289. i. KOUERED.\textsuperscript{437}

375. A-GAYNE / 378. FULLE FAYNE: a-gayne: ‘anew’, for the etymology and vowel development, see 203. i. AÆYN\textsuperscript{438}; fulle fayne: ‘well pleased’, <OE fægen. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/.\textsuperscript{439}

\textsuperscript{432} OED, nim, n., †1.; BRUNNER, K., (1963): p. 76.
\textsuperscript{433} OED, feed, v., 1.a..
\textsuperscript{434} OED, stead, n., II.2.†d..
\textsuperscript{435} OED, drink, v., II.7.e..
\textsuperscript{436} OED, face, v., I.1.a..
\textsuperscript{437} OED, cover, v., †3.a..
\textsuperscript{438} OED, again, adv., A.II.4.a..
\textsuperscript{439} OED, fain, adj., A.1.a..
376. MARKE / 377. WERKE: marke: ‘embroider’, now obs.. For the etymology of the verb see 246. MARKED WAS OF MOLDE. EOE /œə/ monophthongized to /œ/ in LOE and in the passage to EME, due to the influence of /r/ it was raised to /e/. In ME /r/ further influenced the vowel causing the lowering to /a/ in the 15th c.. For the further development of the vowel, see 195. ii. FARE440; werke: ‘creation, handiwork’, <OE weorc. The development of the vowel is discussed in 83. ii. WROGHT. The rhyming vowel is /e/.

381. CERTEYNE / 384. ii. SWAYNE: certeyne: ‘sure, certain’, for the etymology see 104. i. SERTES. The word entered English with ME /e/ and the stress shifted from the second syllable to the first. In the 15th c. short /e/ in a +/r/ context was lowered to /a/ first in the North and later it also in the South. This shift affected both native and loanwords but French and Latin loans especially went back to /e/ after the lowering of the vowel because of the influence of the Latin spelling. So in LME words like certain, desert were nevertheless pronounced /er/. The further development of the vowel is discussed in 83. ii. WROGHT; swayne: ‘a young boy attending on a knight’, <OE swan <Old Norse sveinn ‘boy, servant’, now obs.. The vowel developed as in 78. PLAYNGE. The rhyming vowel is /æ/.

382. ϏYNG / 383. KYNG: Ϗyng: ‘thing’, see 40. ϏYNG444; kynge: ‘king’, see 1. iii. KYNG above. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/.

441 OED, work, n., II.9.a..
443 OED, swain, n., †1..
444 OED, thing, n., II.8.c..
384. i. FELLE: ‘befell, was fitting to’, arch., <OE feallan – feoll – feollon – gefeallen, strong verb of the 7th class.\[446\]

385. FESTE / 386. HONESTE: feste: ‘feast, banquet’ <OF feste. The word entered English with ME /ɛ:/ and without shifting its original stress. Subsequently the vowel developed as in 3. ii. DELE\[447\]; honeste: ‘sumptuous’, <OF honeste, this meaning is now obs.. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/\[448\].

387. KYNGE / 390. FYDYLLEYNG: kynge: ‘king’, see 1. iii. KYNG above; fydylleyng: ‘fiddle, string instrument’, <OE fiðele. No forms ending in -ing/-yng are recorded for the instrument. The suffix was possibly added here for the sake of the rhyme. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/.

388. MENSTRALSE / 389. iii. SAWTRE: menstralse: ‘minstrelsy, musical entertainment’, now obs. and historical, <OF menstralsie\[449\]; sawtre: ‘psaltery’, <Anglo-Norman psalterie <classical Latin psalterium. The two words do not rhyme.\[450\]

389. i. TROMMPUS: ‘trumpets’, <14th c. French trompe.\[451\]

389. ii. TABOURS: ‘drum’, <OF tabur, now rare.\[452\]

\[445\] The rhyme is also present on ll. 393. KYNG / 396. ÌYNG, 559. KYNGE / 560. ÌYNG, 849. KYNG / 852.

\[446\] OED, fall, v., V.†33..


\[448\] MED, honest(e), (adj.) 3(a).

\[449\] OED, minstrelsy, n., 1.a..

\[450\] OED, psaltery, n., 1..

\[451\] OED, trump, n., 1.a..

\[452\] OED, tabor | tabour, n., 1.a..
391. SMALLE / 392. ii. HALLE: smalle: ‘young’, see 61. SMALLE; halle: ‘large room’, see 28. ii. HALLYS. The rhyming vowel is /a/ as in 61. SMALLE / 62. iii. SALE.

392. i. KURTULLE: ‘gown’, <OE cyrtel.

394. BRYȝTH / 395. Y-DYȝTH: bryȝth: ‘brightly’, see 45. BRYGHT; y-ȝȝth: ‘adorned’, see 3. iii. DYGHTE above. This form of the past participle beginning in i, y- was originally ge- and started to be vocalised in EOE through the intermediate levels of ȝe-, ȝi-, i-. It was first lost in northern and Midlands dialects (about the 11th c.) whereas it remained longer in southern ones: in 14th-century London it was used in free variation as proven by Chaucer's use which shows no regularity. Its latest development can be observed in present south-western dialects in the form of a-, which is nevertheless felt as an archaism. For the rhyme, see 133. DYGHTE / 134. ii. BRYȝT.

397. LOKED HER VP-ON / 398. NON: loked her vp-on: ‘looked at her’, loked ‘looked’ <OE locian – locode – gelocod, weak verb of the 2nd class, vp-on ‘at’ <EME upon, see 98. ㄬER-UPONE; non: ‘no-one’, see 101. ii. NON. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/.


---

453 OED, small, adj., II.3.c..
454 OED, hall, n.1, 7.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 862. HALLE / 863. SMALLE.
455 OED, kirtle, n. 2.a..
457 OED, look, v., l.1.a.(a).
458 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 871. VPON / 872. NON.
STEDE⁴⁵⁹; be-holde: ‘contemplate’, see 249. BE-HOLDE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː:/.

403. GENT / 404. LENT: gent: ‘polite’, see 55. GENT; lent: ‘granted’, <OE lendan – lente – gelendet, weak verb of the 1st class. Both the syncopation process involving the past tense and the vowel development are discussed in 56. SENTE. The rhyming vowel is /e/.⁴⁶⁰

405. TOLDE / 408. BOLDE: tolde: ‘told’, see 20. ii. TELLE above; bolde: ‘courageous’, <OE bald. For the development of the vowel, see 54. GOO. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː:/.

409. SYR KADORE / 410. WORE: Syr Kadore: the proper name of the King’s steward; wore: ‘were’, a form for were (see 182. WER) to be found typically in ME, where the vowel shows retraction to /ɔː:/ The rhyming vowel is /ɔː:/⁴⁶¹

411. TYLLE / 414. WYLLE: tylle: ‘to’, for the etymology and the development of the vowel, see 226. iii. TYLLE⁴⁶²; wylle: ‘will’, see wylle at 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE. The rhyming vowel is /i/.⁴⁶³

412. LORE / 413. BY-FORE: lore: ‘erudition’, <OE lar, strong feminine noun, now arch.. For the development of the vowel, see 60. MOO above⁴⁶⁴; by-fore: ‘before’. For the etymology and the vowel development see 163. BY-FORN above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː:/.

⁴⁵⁹ OED, † wield, n., 1.a..
⁴⁶⁰ OED, lend, v.², 2.a..
⁴⁶¹ OED. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 490. SYR KADORE / 491. WORE, 940. KADORE / 941. WORE.
⁴⁶² OED, till, prep., A.I.2.a..
⁴⁶³ The same rhyme occurs in ll. 895. TYLLE / 896. WYLLE, 901. WYLLE / 902. TYLLE.
⁴⁶⁴ OED, lore, n¹, 5.a..
415. i. SPAKKE: ‘spoke’, <OE sprecan – spræc – spræcon – gesprecen, strong verb of the 5th class. In LOE, the consonantal cluster /spr/ was one of those which underwent simplification through loss of one consonant (sprecan > specan). In the same period /e/ underwent lengthening when in open syllable, reaching the level of /ɛ:/—and thus merging with the development of LOE /æ:/— in EME. The vowel reached EModE unchanged and became /i/465, its current realisation.466

415. ii. RYCHE IN RAY / 416. SAY: ryche in ray: ‘in rich array, richly dressed’ now poet., <Anglo-Norman arai = OF arei467; say: ‘said’, <OE secgan – sægde – gesægd, weak verb of the 3rd class. In LOE /æɡ/ underwent the same modifications which occurred to the vowel in 298. ii. YʒEN, thus becoming /æj/. Later in EME /æ/ was lowered to /a/, the diphthong /æj/ therefore turning into /ai/, as the similar /ej/ becoming /ei/ in the same period. Subsequently the vowel developed as in 78. PLAYNGE. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/468.

417. STYLLE / 420. WYLLE: stylle: ‘soft’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 330. STYLLE469; wylle: ‘will’, see 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE. The rhyme is discussed in 327. WYLLE / 330. STYLLE.

418. i. WHENS: ‘whence, from what place’, also ME whennes<OE hwanone.

The ending -s, originally -es, was used to form adverbs and was identical with

465 For the theory behind the replacement of /ɛ:/ with /i:/, see 3. ii. DELE.
467 OED, array, n., I.8.a.
469 OED, still, adj., A.3.a..
the genitive singular ending of many masculine and neuter nouns and also of
adjectives. -es was analogically added also to feminine nouns in adverb-forming
function (e.g. nihtes ‘by night’). Furthermore, as OE had adverbs governed by
the preposition to and a genitive (e.g. to-gains) and other adverbs governed by
prepositions plus accusatives and datives (e.g. on-gegn, see 203. i. A3EYN
above), the latter consequently acquired parallel forms resembling the genitive
adverbs (e.g. aȝeine).

423. SENE / 426. BENE: sene: ‘see’, for the verb, see 68. SYE above. The
vowel development is discussed in 87. iii. KNE; bene: ‘be’, see 11. BE. For the
rhyme, see 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above. The rhyming vowel is /eː/.

CERTEYNE; curtesye: ‘courteous behaviour’, <OF cur-, cortesie. Court entered
English with ME /uː/. Differently from words as 208. RENOWNE and 209.
CROWNE, in a + /rC/ context the LME diphthongisazion of /uː/ did not occur.
The presence of /r/ was relevant also in the passage to EModE, when it
provoked a slight fronting and lowering of /u/ to /uː/ and the appearance of a /æ/ glide, giving as a result the diphthong /uːæ/ which was later further lowered via
/oʊæ/ to the current /ɔʊæ/. For the rhyme, see 67. ii. SLYE / 68. SYE.

427. i. KONNYNGEST: ‘the most skilful, clever’, <OE cunnende <cunnan (see
42. KOWTH), the forms of the adj. cunning, connyng cannot be found in OE but

---

470 OED, whence, adv., l.1.a..
became common in the 14th c. in the earlier sense of ‘knowing’. Now only lit. archaism.\textsuperscript{472}

427. ii. WOMMON / 428. CRYSTENDOM: wommon: ‘woman’, see 222. i. WOMMON above; crystendom: ‘Christendom’, <OE cristendom. For the rhyme, see 4. iii. TO DONE / 5. iii. WONE above.\textsuperscript{473}

429. SENE / 432. QUENE: sene: ‘seen’, for the verb to see, see 68. SYE above. The vowel shared the same development as the one in 210. STEDE; quene: see 7. ii. QWENE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

430. RAYE / 431. MAY: raye: ‘king’, <Anglo-Norman rai, raie, rei, now obs.\textsuperscript{474}; may: ‘maiden’, see 189. MAY. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/.\textsuperscript{475}

433. VERAMENT / 434. SENT: verament: ‘really’, <Anglo-Norman veirement, now obs.\textsuperscript{476}; sent: ‘requested to go to’, for the verb and the phonological development, see 56. SENTE. The rhyming vowel is /e/.\textsuperscript{477}

435. SAY / 438. DAY: say: ‘say’, see 416. SAY; day: ‘day’, see 192. ii. DAY. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/.

436. HASTELY / 437. EGARYE: hastely: ‘in haste’, see 287. HASTYLY; Egarye: another spelling for the fictitious name which Emaré gives herself to conceal her real identity. The rhyming vowel is /ii/ as in 286. BER-BY / 287. HASTYLY.

\textsuperscript{472} OED, cunning, adj., 2.a..
\textsuperscript{473} OED, Christendom, n., 3.a..
\textsuperscript{474} OED, † ray, n.7, 1..
\textsuperscript{475} The same rhyme occurs in ll. 451. RAY / 452. MAY.
\textsuperscript{476} OED, † verament, adv., a..
\textsuperscript{477} OED, send, v., l.*1.a.. The same rhyme occurs in 619. VERAMENT / 620. ii. SENTE.
441. MAY / 444. ii. GAY: may: ‘maiden’, see 189. MAY; gay: ‘noble, beautiful’, <Anglo-Norman gai, gaye, a conventional epithet of praise for a woman in use until the 18th c., obs.. For the development of the vowel and the rhyme, see 189. MAY / 192. ii. DAY. 478


444. i. HALUENDELLE: ‘half’, <OE þone healfan dæl, accusative of se healfa dæl ‘the half part’, now obs.. 479

445. VNHENDE / 446. FENDE: vnhende: ‘improper’, see 84. HENDE; fende: ‘enemy’, <OE feond, now obs.. The development of the vowel is discussed in 87. iii. KNE. For the rhyming vowel, see 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.

448. BLESSYNGE / 449. WEDDYNGE: blessynge: ‘blessing, favour’, <OE bledsung <bledsian – bledsode – gebledsod, weak verb of the 2nd class, ‘to mark with blood, sacrifice’. Later the word was adopted as a suitable rendering of Latin benedicere ‘speak well of or to, praise, consecrate’ which was in its turn influenced by Hebrew brk, literally ‘to bend’ and therefore ‘to bend the knee, worship, praise, bless God, invoke blessings on, bless as a deity’, weak verb of the 2nd class; weddynge: ‘wedding’, <OE weddung <OE weddian – weddode

478 OED, gay, adj., A.1.†a..
479 OED, ‘halfendeal | halvendeal, adv., †C..
480 OED, † un hend, adj., 2.a..
481 OED, blessing, n., 2.b..
– geweddod, weak verb of the 2nd class (see 253. iii. WEDDE). For the rhyme, see 40. ðYN / 41. ëYNGE. 482

453. LEDE / 456. DEDE: lede: ‘led’, for the verb see 207. LEDE; dede: ‘deed, act’, for the etymology of the word, see 4. ii. DEDUS. The vowel shared the same development as the one in 210. STEDE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 207. LEDE / 210. STEDE.

454. FOR CERTAYNE / 455. A-GAYNE: for certayne: ‘for sure’, see 381. CERTEYNE; a-gayne: ‘again’, for the etymology, see 203. i. AȝEYN. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/ as in 316. RAYN / 317. A-GAYN.

457. BRYGHT / 458. ii. DYȝTH: bryght: ‘bright’, see 45. BRYGHT; dyȝth: ‘made’, for the verb see 3. iii. DYGHTE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE. 483

458. i. PURUYANCE: ‘preparations’, <Anglo-Norman porveaunce ‘foresight, provision for the future, divine Providence’. 484

460. A-RYGHT / 461. KNYȝTH: a-ryght: ‘properly’, see 86. RYGHT 485; knyȝth: ‘knight’, see 85. ii. KNYȝT. For the rhyme, see 85. ii. KNYȝT / 86. RYGHT above.

463. WAS / 464. PRESE: was: ‘was’, see 121. WAS; prese: ‘crowd’, <Anglo-Norman pres. The two words do not rhyme. 486

482 OED, wedding, n., 1..
483 OED, dight, v., III. 14.a..
484 OED, purveyance, n., †3..
485 OED, aright, adv., 1..
486 OED, wedding, n., 1.

469. i. MANGERY: ‘banquet, feast’, <Anglo-Norman mangerie, now obs.

471. SE / 474. GAME AND GLE: se: ‘see’, for the etymology of the verb, see 68. SYE above; game and gle: ‘mirth, joy’, for the etymology, see 132. GLEWE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 93. SE / 96. ±E.


475. SWETE / 476. ȝETE: swete: ‘sweet’, see 212. ii. SWETE; ȝete: ‘yet’, <OE giet, gieta. The vowel in yet underwent shortening between OE and ME, so its realisation in EME was /e:/ For the development of the vowel and the rhyme, see 19. iii. DWELLE / 20. ii. TELLE above.


---

486 OED, press, n., II.5.a..
487 OED, minstrel, n., I.3.a..
488 OED, † mangery, n., 1.a..
489 OED, glee, n., 3.a..
490 OED, † be leave | be leve, v., II.6..
491 OED, yet, adv., II.2.a.(b).
492 OED, meek, adj., A.†1.
481. TYME / 482. ii. SAREZYNE: tyme: ‘time’, <OE tima, weak masculine noun, often overlapping in meaning in OE with tide ‘portion, extent, or space of time’, now obs.. For the development of the vowel, see 14. SYDE above\(^495\); Sarezyne: ‘Saracens’, <OF Sar(r)azin, -cin <late Latin Saracenus. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.\(^496\)

482. i. BE-SETTE: ‘closed round’, <OE besettan – besette – beset, weak verb of the 1st class.\(^497\)

483. i. CUMBERED: ‘benumbed’, <OF encombrer <late Latin incombrare ‘to block, obstruct’.

483. TENE / 486. SENE: tene: ‘trouble, grief’, <OE teona, masculine noun, arch.\(^498\); sene: ‘seen’, for the verb to see, see 68. SYE above. The vowel shared the same development as the one in 210. STEDE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

484. GALYS / 485. PRYS: Galys: ‘Galicia’, an area of Spain in the north-east of the country\(^499\); prys: ‘virtue’, for the etymology and phonological development see 92. PRYS above. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

487. TYDE / 488. ii. SYDE: tyde: ‘time’, <OE tid, now this meaning is obs. or dial., for the phonological development see 14. SYDE; syde: ‘place’, for the etymology see 14. SYDE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

---

\(^493\) OED, mild, adj., A.1.d..
\(^494\) OED, child, n., IV.17.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 640. MYLDE / 641. CHYLDE.
\(^495\) OED, time, n., A.l.*1.a..
\(^496\) OED, Saracen, n., A.1.a..
\(^497\) OED, beset, v., 4..
\(^498\) OED, teen, n.\(^1\), 3.a..
\(^499\) OED, Galician, adj.\(^1\) and n.\(^1\).
\(^500\) OED, price, n., II.3.\(^1\)b.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 985. PRYSE / 986. GALYS.
488. i. GEDERED: ‘gathered’, <OE gaderian – gaderode – gaderod, weak verb of the 2nd class. For the process involving d, see 7. i. MODUR above.\(^{502}\)

489. SHENE / 492. QWENE: shene: ‘bright, shining’, the etymology and phonological development are discussed in 150. SHENE; qwene: ‘queen’, see 7. ii. QWENE for the discussion about the word. The rhyming vowel is /eː/.\(^{502}\)

493. NONE / 494. HEM EUERYCHONE: none: ‘no one’, see 30. NONE; hem euerychone: ‘every one of them’, adj. absol.. See 27. NOME / 30. NONE for the rhyme.\(^{503}\)

495. CLERKE / 498. WERKE: clerke: ‘scholar, penman’, <OF clerc. The vowel developed as in 195. ii. FARE but differently from it, it preserved the spelling <er> in ModE\(^{504}\); werke: ‘operation’, see 377. WERKE above. The rhyming vowel is /e\.\(^{505}\)

496. HOME / 497: FOME: home: ‘home’, <OE ham, strong masculine noun. For the development of the vowel, see 243. GOLDE\(^{506}\); fome: ‘foam’, <OE fam, strong masculine or neuter noun. The two words share the development of the vowel and The rhyming vowel is /oː/.\(^{507}\)

499. YN PLACE / 500. WAS: yn place: ‘immediately’, <Anglo-Norman and OF place. The word entered English with ME /aː/ and subsequently developed as

\(^{501}\) OED, side, n.\(^1\), III.11.b..
\(^{502}\) OED, gather, v., I.2.a..
\(^{503}\) OED, every, adj., III.10.b..
\(^{504}\) OED, clerk, n., 1.a..
\(^{505}\) OED, work, n., 1.3.b..
\(^{506}\) OED, home, n., A.2.a..
\(^{507}\) OED, foam, n., 1.a.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 805. FOME / 806. HOM.
the one in 27. NOME\textsuperscript{508}; was: ‘was’, see 121. WAS. The two words do not rhyme.

501. SERKE / 504. KYNGUS MARKE: serke: ‘shirt’, <OE sarc, masculine noun\textsuperscript{509}; kyngus marke: ‘birthmark signifying royalty’, <OE mearc, strong feminine noun; for the etymology of kyngus, see 1. iii. KYNG. The rhyming vowel is /e/ as in 376. MARKE / 377. WERKE.\textsuperscript{510}

502. BODY / 503. GODELE: body: ‘body’, <OE bodig. LOE /o/ reached EME unchanged and continued throughout ME. In LME it started to be slightly more open reaching the level of /ɒ/—its current pronunciation—in EModE\textsuperscript{511}; godely: ‘handsome’, <OE godlic. For the phonological development, see 74. GODE. The two words do not rhyme.\textsuperscript{512}

505. HONOUR / 506. SEGRAMOUR: honour: ‘honour’, see 69. ii. HONOUR; Segramour: the name given to the King of Galicia and Emaré’s son. For the rhyme, see 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE above.

507. FODE / 510. GODE: fode: ‘a child regarded as one who is fed or nurtured’, <OE foda, now obs.. For the development of the vowel, see 2. MONE above\textsuperscript{513}; gode: ‘good’, see 74. GODE. The rhyming vowel is /oː/.

508. SYR KADORE / 509. THORE: Syr Kadore: the name of the King’s steward; thore: ‘there’, see 181. ÞER. The rhyming vowel is /oː/.

\begin{footnotes}
\footnotetext[508]{OED, place, n.\textsuperscript{1}, P2.a.(a); WELNA, J., (1978): p. 112.}
\footnotetext[509]{OED, sark, n., a..}
\footnotetext[510]{KURATH, H., KUHN, S.M. (eds.), (1956): v. 5-I, p. 523, king, n., 1b(a).}
\footnotetext[511]{OED, body, n., l.1.a.}
\footnotetext[512]{OED, goodly, adj., 1..}
\footnotetext[513]{OED, food, n., †II.6..}
\end{footnotes}
511. HYȝYNGE / 512. KYNGE: hyȝynge: ‘quickly, in haste’, for the etymology of the word, see 193. ii. IN HYE. The suffix was possibly added here for the sake of the rhyme; kynge: ‘king’, see 1. iii. KYNG above. For the rhyme, see 40. ṢYNG / 41. ȘYNGE above.

513. BLODE / 516. ȘODE: blode: ‘temper’, see 73. BLODE; șode: ‘went’, see 213. ȘEDE. The rhyming vowel is /o:/ as in 73. BLODE / 74. GODE.515

514. WENDE / 515. LENTE: wende: ‘go’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 81. WENDE; lente: ‘remained, stayed, see 404. LENT above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/516

517. RYCHELY / 518. HASTYLY: rychely: ‘in rich manner’, <OE riclice; hastyly: ‘soon’, for the etymology, see 287. HASTYLY. The rhyming vowel is /i/ as in 286. &ER-BY / 287. HASTYLY.517

519. SPEDDE / 522. BEDDE: spedde: ‘succeed, fare well, now arch. in this meaning, <OE spadan – spedde – gesped, weak verb of the 3rd class. For the development of the vowel, see 7. ii. QWENE518, bedde: ‘bed’, see 254. BEDDE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/519

---

514 OED, hying, n..
515 OED, go, v., III.*30..
516 OED, † lend, v.,3.a..
517 OED, richly, adv., 2.
518 OED, speed, v., 1.2.b..
519 OED, bed, n., I.1.a..
520. Y-BORNE / 521. BE-FORNE: y-borne: ‘borne’, for the etymology and phonological development, see 49. BORN; be-forne: ‘openly’, now obs.. For the etymology and the rhyme, see 163. BY-FORN / 164. UNYKORN.

523. TYDYNGE / 524. SHYLYNGE: tydynge: ‘piece of news’, <LOE tidung, feminine noun, shylynge: ‘shillings’, <OE scilling, masculine noun. The invariable use of the word is vulgar. For the rhyme, see 40. ÞYNG / 41. ÞYNGE above.

525. CLADDE / 528. LEDE: cladde: ‘dressed’, arch. in this meaning, apparently educed from OE clādod ‘covered with clothes’ <OE klædan, weak verb of the 3rd class <Old Norse klæða ‘to clothe’. The vowel developed as the one in 335. MADDE; lede: ‘lead’, for the etymology and phonological development, see 207. LEDE. The rhyming vowel is /æ:/.

526. WYNE / 527. HYT WAS TYME: wyne: ‘wine’, <OE win <Latin vinum; hyt was tyme: ‘it was time’, see 481. TYME. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

532. FRO / 533. DO: fro: ‘from’, <OE fram <Old Norse fra. The word entered Northern English with /a:/ . Starting from the 12th c. in the other dialects the vowel started a process of retraction and became slightly less open reaching /ɔ:/ . Subsequently the labial influenced EME /ɔ:/ bringing it to the higher level of /ɒ:/ in ME. Between the 15th and the 16th c. the vowel was lowered back to /ɒ:/, the current pronunciation. The word remains in current English meaning

---

520 OED, before, adv., A.I.†3..
521 OED, tiding, n.1, 2.a..
522 OED, shilling, n., 1.d..
523 OED, clad, adj., 1.a..
524 OED, wine, n., 1.a..
direction only in the expression *to and fro* ‘backwards and forwards’ and of or *fro* ‘for or against’\(^{525}\); do: *next*, *OE da, pa*, now obs.. *Da, pa* entered EME with /\(a:/\) and soon developed into /\(ou/\). Subsequently the vowel developed as the one in 268. *BOOT.* In *LOE* \(d\) and \(p\) started to be expressed by *<th>* and the word *tho* remains in south western *ModE* only with the meaning of ‘then, at that time’. The rhyming vowel is /\(o:/\).\(^{526}\)

535. WYTH EUYLLE / 536. DEUYLLE: *wyth euylle*: ‘with evil intention’, *<OE yfel.* *ModE* *evil* may derive from Kentish *evel* or be the result of *LOE* lengthening of /\(i/-\) to /\(e:/\) and subsequent narrowing of the vowel to *LME* /\(i:/\) because of the Great Vowel Shift\(^{527}\); *deuylle*: ‘devil’, *<OE deofol.* The vowel shared its development with the one discussed in 6. ii. HEUEN. The rhyming vowel is /\(i:/\) as in 226. iii. TYLLE / 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE.\(^{528}\)

537. HENDE / 540. iii. FENDE: *hende*: ‘near, at hand’, now obs.. For the etymology of the word see 84. HENDE\(^{529}\); *fende*: ‘evil’, see 446. FENDE. For the rhyme, see 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.

540. i. FOWLLE: ‘wicked’, *foul fiend* ‘devil’, *<OE ful* ‘rotten’.\(^{530}\)

540. ii. FELTRED: ‘having matted hair or wool’, *<OF felter* <medieval Latin *filtrum*.\(^{531}\)

---


\(^{528}\) *OED*, *devil*, *n.*, I.1.a..

\(^{529}\) *OED*, † *hende* | *hende*, *adv.*, A.1..

\(^{530}\) *OED*, *foul*, *adj.*, A.1.II.7.a.; *fiend*, *n.*, 2.a..

\(^{531}\) *OED*, † *feltered*, *adj.*, 2.a.
541. DAY / 542. WAY:  
*day*: ‘day’, see 192. ii. DAY;  
*way*: ‘way’, see 186. WAY.  
The rhyming diphthong is /ai/ as in 183. PLAY / 186. WAY.

543. STYE AND STRETE / 546. SWETE:  
*stye* and *strete*: ‘everywhere’, see 196. BY STRETES AND BY STYE above.  
*strete* ‘streets, roads’, <OE *street*.  
The phonological development is discussed at 150. SHENE532;  
*swete*: ‘sweet’, see 212. ii. SWETE above.  
The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 147. BE-TWENE / 150. SHENE.

544. SAY / 545. LAYE:  
*say*: ‘say’, see 416. SAY above;  
*laye*: ‘was’, <OE *licgan*  
→ *læg* → *lægon* → *gelegen*, strong verb of the 5th class.  
For the development of the vowel see 78. PLAYNGE above.  
The rhyming diphthong is /ai/ as in 189. MAY / 192. ii. DAY.533

549. DOWNE GAN HE LETE / 552. BLEDE:  
*downe gan he lete*: ‘he shed tears’, for the etymology of the verb see 242. i. LETTE SHAPE A ROBE above.  
The vowel development is discussed in 76. DEDE534;  
*blede*: ‘bleed’, for the etymology of the verb see 448. BLESSYNGE.  
The vowel developed as in 7. ii. QWENE.  
The rhyming vowel here is /e:/ as in 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE.

550. REDYNG / 551. SOWENYNG:  
*redyng*: ‘reading’, <OE *rædan* → *reord* → *redon* → *ræden*, strong verb of the 7th class535;  
*sowenyng*: ‘in a swoon’, for the

532 OED, street, n., A.1.a.; † sty, n.¹, a...  
533 OED, lie, v.¹, I.1.a..  
534 OED, let, v.¹, IV.**22.f..  
535 OED, read, v., I.a..
etymology of the verb, see 284. SOWENYNGE. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. ỳNG / 41. ỳNGE. 536

553. BY / 554. HASTELY: by: ‘next to’, see 159. BY 537; hastily: ‘in haste’, see 287. HASTYLY. The rhyming vowel is /i/ as in 286. ỳER-BY / 287. HASTYLY.

555. FULLE WOO / 556. SO: woo: ‘much distressed’, see 324. WOO for the etymology 538; so: ‘so’, see 315. ALSO for the etymology and the phonological development. For the rhyme, see 51. bOO / 54. GOO. 539

560. SYGH: ‘then’, <OE siðda, adv., now arch. or dial. 540

561. ON ERbE MYGHT GO / 564. TOO: on erbe myght go: ‘live and move’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 54. GOO 541; too: ‘two’, see 203. ii. TWO. The rhyming vowel is here /ɔ:/ as in 202. GO / 203. ii. TWO.

561. SENDE / 562. ii. FENDE: sende: ‘send’, see 56. SENTE above; fende: ‘fiend’, see 446. FENDE. The rhyming vowel is /e/ as in 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.

562. i. LObLY: ‘hideous, loathsome’, <OE laðlic, now literary. 542

565. BE / 566. HE: be: ‘be’, see 11. BE; he: see 342. HE. For the rhyme see 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above.

567. SELE / 570. HELE: sele: ‘seal’, <OF seel <Latin sigillum. The word entered ME with /ɛ:/ For the further development of the vowel in both words,

536 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 607. REDYNG / 608. SWONYNGE.
537 OED, by, prep., A.I.*1.a..
538 OED, woe, adv., A.II.3.a..
539 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 763. WO / 764. SO, 879. SO / 882. WOO, 928. SO / 929. ii. WO.
540 OED, sith, adv., A.†1.a..
541 OED, go, v., l.†1.b..
542 OED, loathly, adj., a..
see 3. ii. DELE\textsuperscript{543}; hele: ‘health, sound body condition’, \textless OE hælu, now obs. exc. Sc.. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/ as in 385. FESTE / 386. HONÆSTE.\textsuperscript{544}

571. YLLE / 572. WYLLE: ylle: ‘morally evil’, now obs. in this meaning. For the etymology and the phonological development, see 336. iii. YLLE\textsuperscript{545}; wylle: ‘desire, liking’. For the word and the rhyme, see 226. iii. TYLLE / 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE.\textsuperscript{546}

573. WELE / 576. CASTELLE: wele: ‘well-being’, now obs. in this meaning, \textless OE wel, well\textsuperscript{547}; castelle: ‘castle’, for the etymology and the development of the word, see 26. i. CASTELLE. The two words here rhyme on /ɛ/.

574. HONDE / 575. LONDE: honde: ‘hand’, see 67. i. HONDES for etymology and phonological development; londe: ‘land’, see 15. ii. LONDE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 15. ii. LONDE / 18. SONDE.\textsuperscript{548}

577. NYȝT / 578. DYȝT: nyȝt: ‘night’, \textless OE neaht. The word developed as 6. LYGHTE\textsuperscript{549}; dyȝt: ‘dressed’. For the etymology, see 3. iii. DYGHTE above. The rhyming vowel here is /i:/ as in 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE.\textsuperscript{550}

579. i. WYSTE: ‘knew’, see 153. i. TO WYTE.\textsuperscript{551}

579. ii. TRESO\MakeLowercase{n} / 582. ii. RESO\MakeLowercase{n}: treson: ‘treason’, \textless Anglo-Norman treysoun = OF traïson\textsuperscript{552}; reson: ‘reason’, \textless Anglo-Norman and OF reson. Both words

\textsuperscript{543} OED, seal, n.\textsuperscript{2}, 1.a..
\textsuperscript{544} OED, † heal | hele, n., 1.a..
\textsuperscript{545} OED, ill, adj., A.1.a..
\textsuperscript{546} The same rhyme occurs in ll. 723. YWYLLE / 726. YLLE.
\textsuperscript{547} OED, † well, n.\textsuperscript{2}, 1.a..
\textsuperscript{548} The same rhyme occurs in ll. 639. HOND[E] / 642. LONDE.
\textsuperscript{549} OED, night, n., A.I.1.a..
\textsuperscript{550} OED, slight, v., III.10.a..
\textsuperscript{551} OED, wit, v.\textsuperscript{2}, 2.a..

157
entered English with ME /ɛ:/ and developed /i:/ in 17th and the 18th c. as in 3. ii. DELE. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/ as in 385. FESTE / 386. HONESTE.553

580. i. HYM: ‘himself’, for the use of the reflexive here, see 87. ii. HYM.

580. ii. AT ESE: ‘in comfort’, <OF eise, aise, ‘elbow-room’ or ‘opportunity’’.554

580. iii. FYNE / 581. WYNE: fyne: ‘well’, <French fin. The word entered ME with front vowel /i:/ which developed as the vowel in 6. LYGHTE above555; wyne: ‘wine’, see 526. WYNE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/.

582. i. BE-RAFTE: ‘stole’, <OE bi-, bereafian – bereafode – bereafod, weak verb of the 2nd class. The syncope occurs in weak verbs of the 2nd class only in verbs with a long stem-vowel.556

583. SOWȝT / 584. BROWȝT: sowȝt: ‘sought’, see 117. i. SOWȝTE for the etymology and phonological development; browȝt: ‘brought’, see 82. BROWGHT for the etymology of the verb and the phonological development. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 82. BROWGHT / 83. ii. WROGHT.

585. KASTE HYT DOWNE / 588. TOWNE: kaste hyt downe: ‘threw it down’, <Old Norse kasta.557 Downe ‘down’, <LOE dune, dun, aphetic form of adune. In about 1200 OE /u:/ started to be written <ou> due to the influence of Anglo-Norman and Central French and it became general in 1300, except in the North where <u> was retained longer. The spelling <ow> appeared in EME before <l,

---

552 OED, treason, n., 1.a..
553 OED, reason, n., II.8.b.. The same rhyme occurs in ll. 795. TRESON / 798. RESON.
554 OED, ease, n., II.7.a..
555 OED, fine, adv., C.b..
557 OED, cast, v., II.11..
n, w>. LOE /u:/ reached EME unchanged and subsequently the vowel developed as the one in 209. CROWNE558, towne: ‘village’, <OE tuun, tun, ‘enclosed place, field’ masculine noun. The modern meaning is a result of the Norman conquest, with town resembling the meaning of French ville and Latin villa. The root vowel underwent the same development of downe above. The rhyming vowel is /u:/ as in 208. RENOWNE / 209. CROWNE.559

586. MAKE / 587. TAKE: make: ‘make’, <OE macian – macode – gemacod, weak verb of the 2nd class560; take: ‘take’, <LOE tacan – toc – tocon – getacen <Old Norse taka – tok – tekinn ‘to grasp’, strong verb of the 6th class. In ME the verb superseded OE niman (see 368. NAM), from then onwards it was the simplest option to express the basic notion of Latin capere, sumere. The vowel in both verbs developed as the one in 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /a:/561

589. SEE / 590. BLE: see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE above; ble: ‘blue’, see 270. BLE. The rhyming vowel here, is /ɛ:/562

591. WYTH / 594. KYGH: wyth: ‘with’, <OE wið563; kygh: ‘country, region’, now arch, <OE cyðð, cyð. When entering EME, /ü:/ was shortened and unrounded to /i/, thus sharing the same development as /i/ in 1. iii. KYNG. For the rhyme, see 40. ÆYNGE / 41. ÆYNGE above.564

---

559 OED, town, n., 3..
560 OED, make, v., I.*1.a..
561 OED, take, v., II.*2.a..
562 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 643. SEE / 644. BLE.
563 OED, with, prep., A.II.***21.a..
592. SPENDYNG / 593. DRYNKE: spendyng: ‘money’, see 271. SPENDYNG above; drynke: ‘liquid nourishment’, <OE drync, drinc. The vowel developed as in 1. iii. KYNG above. For the rhyme, see 40. ỸNG / 41. ṢNGE above. ⁵⁶⁵

595. i. VPON PAIN: ‘with punishment of’, <Anglo-Norman and OF peine <classical Latin poena. ⁵⁶⁶

597. GRYGHT / 600. FRYGHT: gryght: ‘peace’, <OE grið, now obs.; fryght: ‘frith, a wood of some kind’, <OE (ge)fyrhðe, strong neuter noun (see also 29. i. FRYTHES). The spelling here is anomalous. The rhyming vowel here is /t/ as in 40. ỸNG / 41. ṢNGE. ⁵⁶⁸

598. GYLE / 599. MYLE: gyle: ‘guile, treachery’, <OF guile. The word entered English with /iː:/ and subsequently the vowel developed as the one in 6. LYGHTE above; myle: ‘mile’, <OE mil, strong feminine noun. LOE /iː/ reached EME without any modification. For the diphthongization process due to the Great Vowel Shift, see 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE. The rhyming vowel is /iː/. ⁵⁷⁰

601. HOME / 602. SONE: home: ‘home’, see 496. HOME; sone: ‘soon’, 97. SONE. For the rhyme, see 27. NOME / 30. NONE.

603. REDE / 606. ii. DEDE: rede: ‘read’, for the word see 216. REDE above; dede: ‘deed, act’, for the etymology of the word, see 4. ii. DEDUS. The vowel

---

⁵⁶⁵ OED, drink, n., 1.b.
⁵⁶⁶ OED, pain, n., 1.b.
⁵⁶⁷ OED, grith, n., 1.b.
⁵⁶⁸ OED, frith, n., 1.b.
⁵⁶⁹ OED, guile, n., 1.b.
⁵⁷⁰ OED, mile, n., 1.a.
shared the same development as the one in 210. STEDE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 207. LEDE / 210. STEDE.571

606. i. DE[L]FULLE: ‘doleful, sorrowful’, <OF doel <late Latin dolium + ful, now arch. or lit..572

604. ALAS / 605. CASE: alas: ‘alas’, see 290. ALAS; case: ‘event, occurrence’, <OF cas <Latin casus. The word entered English with /a:/. Borrowings from French were the only instances of /a:/ in closed syllables—native words had /a:/ only in open syllables. Subsequently the vowel developed as the one in 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /a:/573

609. BLEDE / 612. VNϷUR WEDE: blede: ‘bleed’, see 552. BLEDE above; vnϷur wede: ‘under her clothes’, see 250. UNϷUR WEDE. The rhyming vowel here is /e:/ as in 250. UNϷUR WEDE / 251. GOD OF HEUEN HYT FOR-BEDE.

613. i. DELE: ‘lamentation’, for the etymology see 606. i. DE[L]FULLE above.574

613. ii. HALLE / 614. CALLE: halle: ‘hall’, see 28. ii. HALLYS; calle: ‘shout, summon’, <Old Norse kalla ‘to call, cry, summon’. The word entered in EME with /a/ which reached ME unchanged. Subsequently the vowel shared the same development as the one in 61. SMALLE. The rhyming vowel here is /a/.575

571 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 622. REDE / 623. DEDE, 769. REDE / 770. DEDE.
572 OED, doeful, adj., A.1..
573 OED, case, n., I.†1.a.; WELNA, J., (1978): pp. 112, 117, 190. The same rhyme occurs in 646. ALAS / 647. KASE.
574 OED, dele | dool | dule, n., 2.a..
575 OED, call, v., I.†1.a..
615. BE / 618. ME: be: ‘be’, see 11. BE; me: ‘me’, see 175. ii. ME. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE.576

616. A-MYS / 617. YS: a-mys: ‘amiss’, also ME a mis, amyss577; ys: ‘is’, see 1. ii. YS. The rhyming vowel here is /i/.

620. i. LO: ‘Oh’, <OE la, interjection.

621. ME / 624. ii. SEE: me: ‘me’, see 175. ii. ME; see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/ as in 307. SEE / 308. FRE.

624. i. MOSTE: ‘must’, <OE mot (1st and 3rd pers.) – motan (pres. plur.) – moste (pret.), preterite-present verb belonging to the 6th class. Must was originally the past tense of the verb motan ‘to be permitted to’ which, as any other preterite-present verb, developed present tense uses; the present tense use of motan had meanings expressing obligation. The present tense forms may possibly have developed from the subjunctive form of the verb which survives until EModE. The meanings and usage of the new present forms were fully established in the 14th c. and in the same century the 2nd pers. sing. form most died out because of its identity with the past tense of the same verb. Since then motan developed new past tense forms (ME moht, ModE mought) resulting from the confusion with the past tense forms of the verb may. Archaizing writers continued to use the form mote until the 16th c. when it died out. It is difficult to understand how the verb passed from a meaning of concession to do something to the current one. Francovich-Onesti hypotheses

576 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 919. BE / 920. ME.
577 OED, amiss, adj., B.1.1.
that the modern meaning may come from its negative use ‘you may not, so you have to’. One of the first examples of this use of the verb dates back to the 13th c.. Here a verb of motion has been left out, a use now archaic.578

625. QWENE / 626. BENE: qwene: ‘queen’, see 7. ii. QWENE above; bene: ‘be’, see 11. BE. For the rhyme, see 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/579

627. KARE / 630. SPARE: kare: ‘sorrow, grief’, this meaning is now obsolete, <OE caru, cearu. LOE /a/ was fronted to /a/ in EME when lengthened in open syllable, thus resulting in /a:/ and filling the empty slot left by LOE /a:/ which became /ɔ:/ in EME. From then onwards, /a/ and /æ/—which became /a/ in the same period—shared the same development in this kind of context. Next, /a:/ in a +/r/ context narrowed to /ɛ/ and in LME developed an /a/ glide [ɛə] due to the loss of /r/, reaching its current pronunciation580; spare: ‘show mercy’, <OE sparian – sparode – gesparod, weak verb of the 2nd class. The two words in this entry share the same vowel development. The rhyming vowel is /a:/581

628. SHENTE / 629. COMMANDEMENT: shente: ‘confused’, <OE scendan – scent – gescend, weak verb of the 1st class, now dial. or arch.582; commandement: ‘order, injunction’, see 236. ii. COMMANDEMENT above. For the rhyme, see 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.

578 OED, must, v.1, II.3.a.(b).  
579 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 927. QWENE / 930. BENE.  
581 OED, spare, v.1, I.2.a..  
582 OED, shand, v.1, I.a.

633. SORE / 636. MORE: sore: ‘deeply’, see 328. iii. SORE above; more: ‘more’, see 60. MOO above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/ as in 328. iii. SORE / 329. ii. 3ORE.

634. i. GRETE WELL: ‘give my love to’, now obs. with well and lit. when found alone, <OE grœtan – grœt – gegrœted, weak verb of the 1st class.

634. ii. ME / 635. CRISTYANTE: me: ‘me’, see 175. ii. ME; Cristyante: ‘Christianity’, see 108. CRISTYANTE above. The rhyming vowel is /eː/ as in 175. ii. ME / 176. ii. IN SPECYALTE.

636. GET HE NEUUR MORE!: ‘he could not find ever!’.

645. SONDE / 648. WRONGE: sonde: ‘sand’, see 18. SONDE; wronge: ‘not morally right’, <LOE wrang. The word entered LOE as a noun. In a document dating back to the 10th c. there is the first instance of the word used as an adjective. The adjectival use became consistent in EME. The vowel developed as the one in 24. i. SONGE. Furthermore, in EModE initial /w/ was lost in a +/r/ context. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/ as in 15. ii. LONDE / 18. SONDE.


---

583 OED, poorly, adv., 1..
584 OED, sore, adv., 3.a.
585 OED, greet, v., 3.a.
development as the one in 14. SYDE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 478. ii.
MYLDE / 479. WENTE WYTH CHYLDE.587

651. HAPPS / 654. ii. LAPPES: happes: ‘events’, <Old Norse happ588; lappes:
‘hanging parts of a garment to be folded over’, <OE lappa, læppa weak
masculine noun. The rhyming vowel is /a/.589

652. i. SURKOTE: ‘outer coat’, <OF sur-, sor-, sour-, sircot.590

hyde: ‘hide’, see 120. IN HERTE IS NOT TO HYDE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as
in 117. ii. WYDE / 120. HYDE.

654. HYNPUR: ‘on the outside, external’, in early use <utter adj. or <out adj. or
<out adv. + -er, in later use <out adv. or <out adv. + -er.592

656. i. GRUF: ‘face downwards’, <Old Norse grufa, arch..593

655. SEE / 656. ii. VPON A TRE: see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE above; vpon a tre:
‘on a plank’, <OE treow. The vowel development is discussed in 87. iii. KNE
above. The rhyming vowel here is /ɛ:/ as in 307. SEE / 308. FRE.594

657. PAPPES / 660. RAPPES: pappes: ‘nipples’, perhaps <classical Latin
papilla ‘nipple’ or <early Scandinavian pappe, papp, papa ‘breast’, now arch. or

587 OED, wild, adj., A.II.9.a..
588 OED, hap, n.1, 2..
589 OED, lap, n.2, 1.a..
590 OED, surcoat, n., 1..
591 OED, wide, adj., I.1.a..
592 OED, outer, adj., A.I.2..
593 OED, groof | grufe, n., 1..
reg.\textsuperscript{595}, rappes: ‘knocks’, probably imitative, compare tap, clap and Norwegian rapp, also imitative. The rhyming vowel is either /e:/ or /ɛ:/ as in 651. HAPPE\textsuperscript{596}.

658. STRONG / 659. DONGE: strong: ‘intense’, <OE strang, strong. The vowel developed as in 648. WONGE above\textsuperscript{597}; bonge: ‘knocked, thumped’ <Norse: compare Icelandic dengja, Swedish dänga, Danish dænge, all related to the sense of banging, not recorded in OE and now arch. or dial. Possibly conjugated on the analogy of sing, fling. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 15. ii. LONDE / 18. SONDE.\textsuperscript{598}

661. WEPE / 662. A-SLEPE: wepe: ‘weep’, for the etymology see 302. i. WEPYNE above; a-slepe: ‘asleep’, <OE on slæpe. The phonological development of both words is discussed at 150. SHENE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/\textsuperscript{599}

663. MOWTH / 666. SOWTHE: mowth: ‘mouth’, <OE mub.\textsuperscript{600} The vowel development is discussed in 209. CROWNE above; sowthe: ‘south’, <OE svþ, svð, adv.. In OE the word was used only as an adverb; it is only in ME that it started to be employed as an adj., possibly as a consequence of its being the first element in compounds such as southdeal n., south end n., south half n.. The phonological development of the vowel of both words is discussed in 209.

\textsuperscript{595} OED, pap, n.\textsuperscript{1}, 1.a..
\textsuperscript{596} OED, rap, n.\textsuperscript{2}, I.1.b..
\textsuperscript{597} OED, strong, adj., 13.a..
\textsuperscript{598} OED, dinging, v.\textsuperscript{1}, †1..
\textsuperscript{599} OED, asleep, adv., 1.a..
\textsuperscript{600} OED, mouth, n., I.1.a..
CROWNE above. The rhyming vowel is /u:/ as in 208. RENOWNE / 209. CROWNE.⁶⁰¹

664. i. ONUS: ‘once’, <OE ænes. For the discussion on the formation of adverbs, see 418. i. WHENS above.⁶⁰²

664. ii. LOND / 665. STRONG: lond: ‘land’, see 15. ii. LONDE above; strong: ‘strong, intense’, see 658. STRONG. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 15. ii. LONDE / 18. SONDE.

667. i. WARYE: ‘curse’, <OE wirgan – wirgede – gewirged, weak verb of the 2nd class, now obs.⁶⁰³

667. ii. SEE / 668. THE: see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE; the: ‘you’, see 46. ii. þE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 93. SE / 96. þE.

669. GROWHT / 672. KOWþE: growht: ‘complain’, <OF groucier, now obs. exc. dial. or arch.⁶⁰⁴; kowþe: ‘could’, see 42. KOWTH above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 280. ii. BEþOWGHT / 281. MYSWROWHT.

670. PRAYER / 671. DERE: prayer: ‘prayer’, <Anglo-Norman and OF priere. The phonological development is discussed in 346. EYR⁶⁰⁵; dere: ‘dear’, see 291. DERE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 291. DERE /294. LERE.

679. ROME / 680. TRONE: trone: see 1. iv. TRONE above. For the rhyme, see 27. NOME / 30. NONE.⁶⁰⁶

⁶⁰¹ OED, south, adv., A.I.a..
⁶⁰² OED, once, adv., A.I.3.a..
⁶⁰⁴ OED, grutch, v., 1.a..
⁶⁰⁵ OED, prayer, n., 1.a..
⁶⁰⁶
684. i. CHAWNSES: ‘unfortunate event, mishap, <OF cheance.’

685. CYTE / 686. FEE: cyte: ‘town’, <OF cite <Latin civitas. Cyte retained its original stress on the last syllable and underwent stress shift later in ME. The word entered ME with /i/ and subsequently developed as in 1. iii. KYNG; fee: ‘property’, <Anglo-Norman fee, fie = OF fé, fi <medieval Latin feodum, feudum. The vowel developed as the one in 87. iii. KNE. For the rhyme. see 361. PYTE / 362. SEE.

687. i. IURDAN: the proper name of the merchant who finds Emaré stranded and rescues her after she has been sent unto the sea the second time.

687. ii. NAME / 690. ii. TANE: name: ‘name’, see 27. NOME above; tane: ‘take’, see 587. TAKE above. This form survives in Scots and many English dialects and was typical of northern ME, where k and the following short vowel were lost leaving the forms ta, tas, tan. The rhyming vowel is /a:/.

688. HE / 689. SEE: he: ‘he’, see 342. HE; see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

690. i. EYER: ‘air’, see 346. EYR above.

691. TYDE / 692. SYỆE: tyde: ‘time’, see 487. TYDE above; sybe: ‘then’, see 560. SYGH. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 487. TYDE / 488. ii. SYDE.

---

606 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 820. TRONE / 821. ROME.
607 OED, chance, n., A.I.2.
608 OED, city, n., 2.a.
609 OED, fee, n.2, 1.3.

699. WEDE / 702. YN LEED: wede: ‘garment’ see 250. UNBUR WEDE; yn leede: ‘among people, on earth’, <OE leod ‘nation’ people’ feminine noun or <OE leode, leoda ‘men’, plural or <OE leod strong masculine, poet. for ‘king’. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 363. LEDE / 366. UNBUR WEDE.611

700. RYGHT / 701. WYGHT: ryght: ‘immediately’, see 86. RYGHT above; wyght: ‘being’, <OE wiht, masculine and feminine noun, now obs.. The word developed as 6. LYGHTE. The rhyming vowel here is /i:/ as in 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE.612

703. LADYE / 704. EGARYE: ladye: ‘lady’, see 31. LADY above; Egarye: another spelling for the fictitious name which Emaré gives herself to conceal her real identity. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 52. LADYE / 53. ii. DYE.

705. DREDE / 708. LEDE: drede: ‘extreme fear’, <EME drede. The vowel developed as the one in 76. DEDE; lede: ‘bring’, see 207. LEDE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 207. LEDE / 210. STEDE.

706. LADYE / 707. BY: ladye: ‘lady’, see 31. LADY above; by: ‘next to’, see 159. BY. The rhyming vowel is /a/ as in 159. BY / 162. STORYE.
709. BYGGYNGE / 710. ŶNGE: bygynge: ‘habitation, home’, <OE biggen + -ing <Old Norse byggja ‘to inhabit’, now obs..614; Ŷnge: ‘young’, see 41. ŶNGE. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. ÑNG / 41. ŶNGE.

711. BRYGHT / 714. RYGHT: bryght: ‘beautiful’, now obs. in this meaning. For the etymology see 45. BRYGHT above615; ryght: ‘immediately’, see 86. RYGHT above. For the rhyme and the vowel development, see 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE above.

712. YN ALLE ÑNGE / 713. BRYNGE: ‘of every kind of’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 40. ÑNG; brynge: ‘bring’, for the etymology, see 82. BROWGHT above. The vowel shared the same development of the one in 40. ÑNG. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. ÑNG / 41. ŶNGE.

715. CRAUE / 716. HAUE: craue: ‘to ask earnestly, to beg for’, <OE crafian – crafode – gecrafod, weak verb of the 2nd class616; haue: ‘have’, see 28. i. HADDE. The rhyming vowel is /a/.

717. DYGHTE / 720. MYGHT: dyght: ‘made’, for the verb see 3. iii. DYGHTE617; might: ‘can’, see 5. ii. MAY above. For the rhyming vowel and its phonological development, see 3. iii. DYGHTE / 6. LYGHTE above.

718. BE / 719. ii. PYTE: be: ‘been’, see 11. BE; pyte: ‘pity’, see 276. PYTE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 273. ii. SE / 276. PYTE.

---

---

614 OED, bigging, n., †1.b..
615 OED, bright, adj., A.3..
616 OED, crave, v., 2.a..
719. i. ME ÞYNKETH: ‘it seems to me’, <OE pron. + þyncan – þuhte – gebuht, weak verb of the 1st class. Compare with þencan in 280. ii. BE-ÞOWGHT for the compensatory lengthening of u. OE þyncan regularly gave ME thinken or thinchen whereas OE þencan ‘think’ gave ME thenken or thenchen, where EME /e/ +N gave ME /i/. The two verbs became thus homophonous in most dialects so that think now means both.618

727. ÞRYFE / 728. ii. ONLYFE: bryfe: ‘to grow well, thrive’, <Old Norse þrífa-sk refl. verb. When entering English EME þriven /i:/ did not undergo any change. For the further vowel development, see 6. LYGHTE 619; onlyfe: ‘alive’, see 43. LYUE above. For the rhyming vowel and the pronunciation, see 13. ii. FER AND WYDE / 14. SYDE above.620

728. i. WAX: ‘became’, see 365. i. WAX.

729. HYLLE / 732. STYLLE: hylle: ‘hill’, <OE hyll, strong masculine and feminine noun. The phonological development is discussed in 1. iii. KYNG621; stylle: ‘secretly’, this meaning is now obs.. For the etymology, see 330. STYLLE. The rhyming vowel is /l/ as in 327. WYLLE / 330. STYLLE.622

730. BOUR / 731. NORTOWRE: bour: ‘bedroom, boudoir’. For the etymology and the phonological development, see 28. iii. BOWRYS above623; nortowre: ‘nurture’, see 62. i. NORTUR. The rhyming vowel is /u:/ as in 112. ii. HONOUR / 113. AZOWR.

620 OED, alive, adj., 1.b.
621 OED, hill, n., 1.a.
622 OED, still, adv., 1.†b.
623 OED, bower, n.†, 2.a.-b.
733. i. ÆR: ‘years’, <OE gear, strong neuter noun. LOE /e:/ reached EME unchanged. Subsequently the vowel in Ær developed as the one in 291. DERE.624

733. ii. OLDE / 734. BOLDE: olde: ‘old’, <OE ald. The vowel developed as the one in 54. GOO625, bolde: ‘corageous’, see 408. BOLDE above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 405. TOLDE / 408. BOLDE.

736. VNÞUR WEDE / 737. ii. STEDE: vnber wede: used as a mere rhyme tag, see 250. UNÞUR WEDE; stede: ‘steed, stallion’, see 210. STEDE. The rhyming vowel here is /e:/ as in 250. UNÞUR WEDE / 251. GOD OF HEUEN HYT FORBEDE.626

737. i. PRIKE: ‘prick, spur’, <OE prician – pricode – gepricod, weak verb of the 2nd class.627

739. SEGRAMOWRE / 740. BOWRE: Segramowre: the name of the King of Galicia and Emaré’s son; bowre: ‘bedroom’, for the etymology, see 28. iii. BOWRYS above. For the rhyming vowel, see 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE.628

739. GONE / 744. ii. HOME: gone: ‘go’, see 54. GOO above; home: ‘home’, see 496. HOME. For the rhyming vowel, see 27. NOME / 30. NONE above.

---

625 OED, old, adj., l.4.a..
626 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 988. VNÞUR WEDE / 989. STEDE.
627 OED, prick, v., ll.10..  
628 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 873. BOWRES / 876. SEGRAMOWRES.
742. **VYCE / 743. GALYS:** *vyce*: ‘immoral habits’, <Anglo-Norman and OF *vice* <Latin *vitium*. For the phonological development see 92. PRYS above629; **Galys**: ‘Galicia’, an area of Spain in the north-east of the country. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 484. GALYS / 485. PRYS.630

744. i. **SEGE:** ‘siege’, < OF *sege, seige, siege* ‘seat’.631

745. **YS / 746. GALYS:** *ys*: ‘is’, see 1. ii. YS above; **Galys**: see 743. GALYS above. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 484. GALYS / 485. PRYS.

748. **ASYCE / 749. PRYSE:** *asyce*: ‘quality, manner’, <OF *asise, assise* ‘act of sitting down or of setting, regulation; regular mode, manner’; **pryse**: ‘virtue’, see 485. PRYS. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 91. RUBYES / 92. PRYS.632


754. **A-VENTOURES / 755. BOWRES:** *a-ventoures*: ‘events, adventures’, <Anglo-Norman *aventur, aventour*, later remodelled after post-classical Latin *adventura*; **bowres**: ‘dwellings’, see 28. iii. BOWRYS. For the rhyming vowel, see 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE.634

629 OED, *vice, n.*, 1.a.,
630 OED, *Galician, adj.*, and *n.*, 1.a.
631 OED, *siege, n.*, 1.a.,
632 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 829. PRICE / 830. ii. A-CYSE.
633 OED, *ride, v.*, 1.a.,
634 OED, *adventure, n.*, 1.a.,
757. NAME / 758. BLAME: name: ‘name’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 27. NOME above; blame: ‘to find fault with’, <OF blâmer, blasmer. The word entered English with ME /a:/ and did not undergo any stress shift. Subsequently ME /a:/ was slightly raised and fronted to LME /æ:/ which soon merged with /æ:/ deriving from the monophthongisation of /ai/. The further vowel development is discussed in 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /a:/ as in 367. CAME / 368. NAM.635

759. TELLYNGE / 762. ÞYNG: tellynge: ‘account, description’, <OE tellan v. + -ing, now arch. or dial.. For the etymology of the verb and the phonological development, see 20. ii. TELLE; Þyng: ‘things’, see 40. ÞYNG. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. ÞYNG / 41. ÞYNGE.

760. ME / 761. EGARE: me: ‘me’, see 175. ii. ME; Egare: the fictitious name which Emaré gave herself to conceal her real identity. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

765. KYNGE / 768. BYDDYNGE: kynge: ‘king’, see 1. iii. KYNG; byddynge: ‘order, injunction’, <OE bid v. + -ing. For the etymology of the verb and the phonological development, see for-bede in 251. GOD OF HEUEN HYT FOR-BEDE. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. ÞYNG / 41. ÞYNGE.637

771. PALE AND WANNE / 774. MANNE: wanne: ‘pallid’, <OE wann; manne: ‘man’, see 37. MANNE above. For the phonological development of both words and the rhyming vowel, see 37. MANNE / 38. ÞANNE.

636 OED, telling, n., 1.b..
637 OED, bidding, n., 5..
638 OED, wan, adj.1, 4.b.
775. SO MOT Y THE / 776. ME: so mot y the: ‘so may I prosper’, see 624. i. MOSTE for the etymology of mot and 727. ÞRYFE for the meaning of the me: ‘me’, see 175. ii. ME. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 93. SE / 96. ÞE.  


778. ȝAF HEM YLLE / 779. SAF GODDYS WYLLE: ȝaf hem ylle: ‘grieved’, now obs. in this meaning. For the etymology of the words and their phonological development, see 175. i. ȝAF and 336. iii. YLLE; saf Goddys wylle: ‘may it not displease God’. For the phonological development of wylle, see 227. TO WORCHE HYS WYLLE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 571. YLLE / 572. WYLLE.  

783. PYTE / 786. HEDDYS ÞRE: pyte: ‘pity’, for the etymology and the vowel development see 276. PYTE above; heddys Þre: ‘three heads’. Þre ‘three’, <OE þri (brie), þrio, þreo. The vowel in the word shared the same development of the one in 87. iii. KNE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 273. ii. SE / 276. PYTE.  

787. GRACE / 788. YN PLACE: grace: ‘grace, favour’, <French grâce. The word entered English with ME /a:/ and did not undergo any stress shift. Subsequently it shared the same development of the vowel in 758. BLAME;
yn place: ‘in person’, see 499. YN PLACE above for the etymology and the phonological development. The rhyming vowel is /aː/.\textsuperscript{645}

790. SENTE / 791. WENT: smente: ‘sent’, see 56. SENTE; went: ‘went’, see 235. WENTE above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔː/ as in 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.


794. i. WHEϷUR: ‘why’, <OE hwæper, hweper.\textsuperscript{646}

796. BRENT / 797. JUGEMENT: brent: ‘burnt’, <OE beorman – beam – burnon – bornen, intransitive strong verb of the 3rd class. Later in OE, bæman – bænde – bæmed, a transitive weak verb of the 1st class was derived from the former. The two verbs remained distinct in OE but in ME they fell together, giving birth to four different present-tense stems—bern-, brin(n-, barn-, bren(n-)—and the difference between transitive and intransitive senses disappeared. Brennen – brende – brent seems to have been the most common form until the 16th century, when it was suddenly supplanted for unclear reasons by burn, burnt, possibly the descendant of earlier bern-, birm.\textsuperscript{647} jucgument: ‘opinion’, <French jugement <juger. The rhyming vowel is /el/ as 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.\textsuperscript{648}

\textsuperscript{645} OED, place, n.1, P2.a.†(b).
\textsuperscript{646} OED, whether, conj., II.§5.
\textsuperscript{647} WRIGHT, J. and WRIGHT, E., (1974): p. 185; OED.
\textsuperscript{648} OED, judgement | judgment, n., 6.
799. TOKE HEM BE-TWENE / 800. QWENE: ‘consulted each other’, for the etymology see 587. TAKE, 124. i. HEM and 8. ii. BYTWENE above\(^{649}\); qwene: ‘queen’, see 7. ii. for QWENE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE.

801. RENOWNE / 804. CASTELLE, TOWRE AND TOWNE: renowne: ‘honour’, see 208. RENOWNE above\(^{650}\); castelle, towre and towne: ‘property’. The rhyming vowel is /u:/ as in 208. RENOWNE / 209. CROWNE.

802. QWENE / 803. ii. CLENE: qwene: ‘queen’, see 7. ii. for QWENE; clene: ‘wholly, entirely’, <OE clæne adv.. the development of the vowel is discussed in 3. ii. DELE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE.\(^{651}\)

803. i. LYFLOPE: ‘means of living’, <OE liif (see 43. LYUE) + OE lad ‘support’ or ‘journey’.\(^{652}\)

807. i. HEUY: ‘sad, grieved’, <OE hefig, now obs..\(^{653}\)

807. CHERE / 810. CLERE: chere: ‘mood’, see 214. CHERE above; clere: ‘fair lady’, now obs. in this elliptical use. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 127. ii. SAFERE / 128. CLERE.\(^{654}\)

808. i. KAREFULLE: ‘full of grief, sorrowful’, see 328. i. CAREFULLE.

808. ii. DRURY: ‘sad, doleful’, <OE dreorig ‘gory, bloody, sorrowful’, obs. or arch. in this meanings.\(^{655}\)

---

\(^{649}\) OED, take, v., VIII.53.†b..
\(^{650}\) OED, renown, n., A.1.a..
\(^{651}\) OED, clean, adv., II.5.a..
\(^{652}\) OED, livelihood, n.†, 2.a..
\(^{653}\) OED, heavy, adj.†, A.VII.27.a..
\(^{654}\) OED, clear, n., C.I.†1..
808. iii. MONE / 809. ON: mone: ‘lamentation’, see 314. MONE above; on: ‘ones’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 30. NONE. Here the form is singular regardless of the plural sense, possibly for the sake of the rhyme. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 27. NOME / 30. NONE.

811. PLAY / 812. WELLE-A-WAY: play: ‘playing’, for the etymology of the verb and the phonological development, see 78. PLAYNGE; welle-a-way: ‘alas’, <OE weg la weg, alteration of OE wa la wa, interj. expressing sorrow. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/ as in 183. PLAY / 186. WAY.

813. DERE / 816. YERE: dere: ‘dear’, see 291. DERE above; yere: ‘years’, see 733. i. ȜER above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 291. DERE / 294. LERE.

815. i. STYNTE: ‘stop’, <OE styntan ‘to blunt, dull’. The simple verb appears much less than compounds astyntan, ætstytan, forstytan. As a matter of fact the ME and ModE meanings of the verb must result from unrecorded senses in OE or be due to Scandinavian influence.

817. COME / 818. FOME: come: ‘came’, see 232. COME; fome: ‘foam’, see 497: FOME above. The rhyming vowel is /o:/ as in 496. HOME / 497: FOME.

819. SAKE / 822. TAKE: sake: ‘guilt’, this meaning is now obs., <OE sacu, strong feminine noun; take: ‘take’, see 587. TAKE for the etymology of the word. The vowel in both verbs developed as the one in 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /a:/.

---

655 OED, dreary, adj., 3..
656 OED, moan, n., 1.a..
657 OED, wellaway, int., A.a..
658 OED, stint, v., i.†5..
659 OED, sake, n., II.6.†b..
823. FELE / 824. WELE: fele: ‘many’, <OE fela, feola, now obs.\textsuperscript{660}; wele: ‘wealth, riches’, <OE wela, weak masculine noun. The vowel developed as the vowel in 415. i. SPAKKE. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/ as in 385. FESTE / 386. HONESTE.\textsuperscript{661}

826. i. DOLYS: ‘alms’, <OE dal, parallel form of dæl which gives deal (see 3. ii. DELE).\textsuperscript{662}

825. MAKE / 828. GATE: make: ‘make’, see 586. MAKE above; gate: ‘way’, <Old Norse gata. The word entered EME with /aː/. Subsequently it developed as 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /aː:/ as in 586. MAKE / 587. TAKE.\textsuperscript{663}

826. ii. DELE / 827. HELE: dele: ‘distribute’, see 3. ii. DELE above; hele: ‘health, sound body condition’, see 570. HELE above. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/ as in 385. FESTE / 386. HONESTE.

830. i. TAKULLE: ‘rigging, ship equipment’, <Middle Low German takel.\textsuperscript{664}

831. FAYR AND FRE / 834. THE WEPUR WAS LYPE OF LE: fayr and fre: ‘beautiful, of pleasant form’, see 71. FAYR AND FRE above; the wepur was lype of le: ‘the weather was fine, peaceful’, for the etymology and vowel development, see 348. THE WEDUR WAS LYTHE OF LE. For the rhyming vowel, see 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above.

\textsuperscript{660} OED, † fele, adj.\textsuperscript{2}, B.1.a..
\textsuperscript{661} OED, weal, n., †1.a..
\textsuperscript{662} OED, dole, n., †1.a..
\textsuperscript{663} OED, gate, n., 6.a..
\textsuperscript{664} OED, tackle, n., 2.a..
832. ORE / 833. WORE: ore: ‘oar’, see 275. ORE; wore: ‘were’, a form for were (see 182. WER). The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 274. Vernacular / 275. ORE.

835. FOME / 836. TRONE: fome: ‘foam’, see 497: FOME above; trone: see 1. iv. TRONE above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 496. HOME / 497: FOME.

837. POWSTE / 840. EMARYE: powste: ‘power, might’, <Anglo-Norman and Old French poesté, poosté, posté < classical Latin potestas power, authority, now Sc. and Irish English; Emarye: another spelling for the proper name of the main character. The two words do not rhyme.

838. COME / 839. ii. NOME: come: ‘came’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 232. COME above; nome: ‘took’, for the etymology of the word see 368. NAM. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 27. NOME / 30. NONE.

839. i. BURGEYS: ‘burgess, citizen’, <OF burgeois.665

841. SONE / 842. COME: sone: ‘son’, for the etymology and the vowel development, see 158. ii. SONNE; come: ‘come’, for the etymology and the phonological discussion, see 232. COME. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 27. NOME / 30. NONE.

843. LETTYNGE / 846. BLESSYNGE: lettynge: ‘delay’, <OE lettan, lette, geletted, weak verb of he 1st class, now obs.666; blesseyng: ‘blessing, favour,

---

665 OED. burgess, n., 1.a.
666 OED. † letting, n.†, 1.b.
see 448. BLESSYNGE for the etymology. The rhyming vowel is /ı/ as in 40. 
BYNG / 41. 3YNGE.

844. FRE / 845. ME: fre: ‘of noble appearance’, for the etymology of the word, see 10. FRE; me: ‘me’, see 175. ii. ME. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 7. ii. 
QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above.  

847. HALLE / 848. PALLE: halle: ‘hall, large room’, for the etymology of the word, see 28. ii. HALLYS above; palle: ‘rich cloth’, <classical Latin pallium ‘covering, cover’, The rhyming vowel is /a/ as in 61. SMALLE / 62. iii. SALE.

850. BE / 851. ii. þE: be: ‘be’, see 11. BE above; þe: ‘you’, see 46. ii. þE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 7. ii. QWENE / 8. ii. BYTWENE above.

851. i. CHALANGE: ‘objection’, <OF ca-, chalenge, -lange, originally -lange which is at the base of calumny as well.  


855. ÞYN / 858. WYNE:byn: ‘yours’, see 5. i. ÞY and 16. i. HER for further discussion on possessives. Differently from dependent possessives, independent ones retain their final n because they are emphatic. By analogy with min, thin, in the South and East Midlands also other possessives started to show final n since the 14th c. (e.g.: hisen, hiren, ouren, youren, heren). On the  

---

667 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 1012. ME / 1013. FRE. 
668 OED, challenge, n., †1.. 
669 OED, spicery, n., 1.a..
other hand, since the end of 13th century in the North and then in the Midlands final s started to appear in the 3rd pers. sing. and in the plural (e.g.: hires, oures, yours, heres, theirs)\textsuperscript{670}; \textit{wyne}: ‘wine’, see 526. WYNE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 580. iii. FYNE / 581. WYNE.

861. MYNE / 864. ii. VN\textsuperscript{b}UR LYNE: \textit{myne}: ‘mine’, for the discussion on possessives, see 855. \textit{YN}; \textit{vnbur lyne}: ‘in their clothes’, <OE \textit{lin} ‘flax’, neuter noun. The phonological development of both words is discussed in 14. SYDE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 580. iii. FYNE / 581. WYNE.\textsuperscript{671}

864. i. LUFSUMME: ‘lovely, beautiful’, <OE \textit{lufsum}.\textsuperscript{672}

866. i. WYSH: ‘washed’, another spelling for 218. i. WESH.

867. KOWRS / 870. HONOWRES: \textit{kowrs}: ‘the courses of the meal’, <French \textit{curs}, \textit{cors}, \textit{cours}. The vowel developed as the one in 26. ii. TOWRE\textsuperscript{673}; \textit{honowres}: ‘esteem, approbation’, for the etymology and the vowel development see 69. ii. HONOUR. The rhyming vowel is /u:/ as in 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE.

868. CURTEYSLY / 869. SY: \textit{curteysly}: ‘courteously’, <OF \textit{corteis}, \textit{curteis}\textsuperscript{674}; \textit{sy}: ‘saw’, for the etymology of the verb, see 68. SYE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 67. ii. SLYE / 68. SYE.

\textsuperscript{671} OED, \textit{line}, \textit{n.1}, 2.†b..\
\textsuperscript{672} OED, \textit{lovesome}, \textit{adj.}, A.3..\
\textsuperscript{674} OED, \textit{courteously}, \textit{adv.}, 1.a..
874. **YN GAME / 875. NAME:** game: ‘in fun, as a joke’, <OE gamen, gomen, strong neuter noun, this meaning is now obs. or dial.\(^{675}\); name: ‘name’, see 27. NOME above. The vowel development of both words is discussed in 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /a:/ as in 367. CAME / 368. NAM.

877. **KYNG / 878. SYKYNGE:** kyng: ‘king’, see 1. iii. KYNG above; sykynge: ‘sigh’, for the etymology of the word, see 328. ii. SYKYNG above. The rhyming vowel is /i/ as in 40. ḞYN / 41. ḞNGE.\(^{676}\)

880. **LESYNGE / 881. WRYNG:** lesynge: ‘lying’, obs. or arch. exc. dial., <OE leasung <leasian – leasode – geleasod, weak verb of the 2\(^{nd}\) class\(^{677}\); wryng: ‘come out’, <OE wringan – wrang – wrungon – wrungen, strong verb of the 3\(^{rd}\) class. The rhyming vowel is /i/ as in 40. ḞYN / 41. ḞNGE.\(^{678}\)

885. ḞOO / 888. ȞOO: Ȟoo: ‘then’, see 51. ḞOO above for the etymology and the phonological development; Ȟoo: ‘yes’, <OE gæ, gee, ge, now dial. and arc.. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 51. ḞOO / 54. GOO.\(^{679}\)

886. **A-NON / 887. SONE:** a-non: ‘at once’, see 359. A-NONE above; sone: ‘son’, see 158. ii. SONNE above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 27. NOME / 30. NONE.

890. i. **W(H)ESSHEN:** ‘washed’, see 218. i. WESH above.

\(^{675}\) OED, game, n., 1..

\(^{676}\) OED, sighing, n., 1.b..

\(^{677}\) OED, leasing, n., 1.a..

\(^{678}\) OED, wring, v., Phrasal verbs, to wring out, 1..

\(^{679}\) OED, yea, adv., A.1.a..
891. **SPYCERYE / 894. CURTEYSLYE:** *spycere*ye: ‘spices’, see 853. SYPYCRYE; *curteyslye*: ‘courteously’, see 868. CURTEYSLY above. The rhyming vowel is /i/ as in 286. ṢER-BY / 287. HASTYLY.

897. **BODY / 900. SPECYALLY:** *body*: ‘person’, for the etymology see 502. BODY\(^{680}\), specyally: ‘in a special manner’, <OF *especial* or <Latin *specialis* + -ly, modelled after Latin *specialiter* or OF *(e)speciaument*, *(e)specialement*. The rhyming vowel is /i/ as in 286. ṢER-BY / 287. HASTYLY.\(^{681}\)

898. **TOWRE / 899. BOWRE:** *towre*: ‘tower’, see 26. ii. TOWRE above for the etymology and the phonological discussion; *bowre*: ‘dwelling’, see 28. iii. BOWRYS for the etymology and the development of the vowel. The rhyming vowel is /u:/ as in 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE.

903. **YS / 906. Y-WYSSE:** *ys*: ‘is’, see 1. ii. YS above; *y-wysse*: ‘certainly’, <OE *gewis* adj., the neuter form of which was used as an adverb since ME. The rhyming vowel here is /i/ as in 616. A-MYS / 617. YS.\(^{682}\)

904. **WENDE / 905. ENDE:** *wende*: ‘went’, for the etymology of the verb and the phonological discussion, see 81. WENDE above; *ende*: ‘conclusion’, <OE *ende*, strong masculine noun. The rhyming vowel is /e/ as in 55. GENT / 56. SENT.\(^{683}\)

\(^{680}\) OED, *body*, n., III.11..
\(^{681}\) OED, *specially*, adv., 1.a..
\(^{682}\) OED, *iwis | ywis*, adv., B..
\(^{683}\) OED, *end*, n., II.7.a..
907. **EMARE / 908. EGARE:** the proper and fictitious names of the main character. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

909. **GALYS / 912. A-SYSE:** Galys: ‘Galicia’, an area of Spain in the north-east of the country; a-syse: ‘manner’, see 748. ASYCE for the etymology and the phonological development. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 484. GALYS / 485. PRYS.

910. **HALLE / 911. ALLE:** halle: ‘hall’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 613. ii. HALLE above; alle: ‘all, every’, <OE eall, all. Both LOE /æ/ and /ɑ/ reached the level of /a/ in EME. Subsequently the vowel developed as the one in 13. i. WALKEN. The rhyming vowel is /a/ as in 61. SMALLE / 62. iii. SALE.

913. **A-FYNE / 914. WYNE:** a-fyne: ‘finally’, <OF a fin, now obs.; wyne: ‘wine’, see 526. WYNE. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as 526. WYNE / 527. HYT WAS TYME.

915. **MORE AND MYN / 918. HELPE HYM YN:** more and myn: ‘people of all ranks, everybody’, now obs., <OE mo (see 60. MOO) and <early Scandinavian minni, minne, mindre, ‘less, smaller’, now obs.; helpe hym yn: ‘helped him to go in’, <OE helpan – healp – hulpon – holpen, weak verb of the 2nd class. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as 526. WYNE / 527. HYT WAS TYME.

---

684 The same rhyme occurs in ll. 922. EMARE / 923. EGARE, 1006. EMARE / 1007. EGARE.
686 OED, † affine, adv.
687 OED, more, n.*, D.1..
921. KYNNE / 924. CHYNNE: kynne: ‘descent’, <OE cyn(n, neuter noun,689; chynne: ‘chin’, <OE cin, probably feminine. The vowel development of both words is discussed in 1. iii. KYNG. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as 526. WYNE / 527. HYT WAS TYME.690

925. WOO / 926. ii. ς: woo: ‘distressed’, see 324. WOO; ς: ‘at that time, then’, see 51. ς:O. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 51. ς:O / 54. GOO.

926. i. MYNGE: ‘relate, give an account’, <OE min + OE -(i)gian, a suffix used to form verbs from nouns and adjectives, consequently belonging to the 2nd class of weak verbs, now obs. or reg..691

929. i. VMBRAYDEST: ‘reproach’, also ME umbreiden – umbraidede – umbreided.692

931. WENTE / 932. GENT: wente: ‘went’, see 235. WENTE above for the etymology of the verb and the vowel development; gent: ‘polite’, see 55. GENT. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 55. GENT / 56. SENTE.693

934. TWO / 935. TO: the etymology of both words and their phonological development is discussed in 203. ii. TWO. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/.

937. ς:ORE / 939. VNBUR GORE: bore: ‘there’, see 181. ς:ER; vnbur gore: ‘under her clothes, <OE gara. The vowel development is discussed in 60. MOO.

The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 274. ς:ORE / 275. ORE.694
939. FOLDE / 942. BE-HOLDE: folde: ‘to embrace’, <OE fealdan – feold – feoldon – gefealdan, strong verb of the 7th class. The vowel developed as the one in 54. GOO, be-holde: ‘contemplate, look at’, for the etymology of the verb, see 249. BE-HOLDE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 399. HADDE YN WOLDE / 402. BE-HOLDE.


945. CARES COLDE / 948. Y-TOLDE: cares colde: ‘deadening sorrow’. Cares: see 627. KARE. Colde: <OE cald, ceald. The vowel development is discussed in 60. MOO; y-tolde: ‘told’, for the discussion on the verb, see 20. ii. TELLE above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 51. ɔ / 54. GOO.

951. SYNNE / 954. SKYNNE: synne: ‘sin’, <OE syn(n; skynne: ‘skin’, <early Scandinavian skinn, skin, skinth. The vowel development of both words is discussed in 1. iii. KYNG. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as 526. WYNE / 527. HYT WAS TYME.

952. EMARE / 953. SEE: Emare: the proper name of the main character; see: ‘sea’, see 307. SEE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 46. ii. þE / 47. EMARE.

---

694 OED, gore, n.², †2.a..
696 OED, fold, v.¹, 9..
698 OED, trinity, n., 2.a..
699 OED, cold, adj., II.9..
698 OED, sin, n., 1.a..
699 The same rhyme occurs in 982. EMARE / 983. SEE.
957. WYNNE / 960. INNE: wynne: ‘earn’, the discussion about the verb is at 173. WAN:
inne: ‘accomodation, inn’, <OE inn, neuter noun. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as 526. WYNE / 527. HYT WAS TYME.

961. KYNG / 962. KOMYNG: kyg: ‘king’, see the discussion at 1. iii. KYNG;
komyng: ‘arrival’, <OE cuman + -ing, see 232. COME for the etymology and the phonological discussion. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. BYNG / 41. ȳNGE.

964. BYNG / 965. LORDYNG: byng: ‘things’, see 40. BYNG; lordyng: ‘lord, sir’, <OE hlafording <OE hlaflord + <OE -ing. This suffix here is used to form derivative masculine substantives meaning ‘one belonging to’ or ‘with the quality of or ‘of the kind of’, hence also as a patronymic ‘son of’, ‘descending from’. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. BYNG / 41. ȳNGE.

969. CRYSTYANTE / 972. Æ: Crystyante: ‘Christianity’, see 108. CRYSTYANTE above; þe: ‘you’, see 46. ii. Æ for the etymology and the phonological development. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 175. ii. ME / 176. ii. IN SPECYALTE.

970. BE-TYDE / 971. ii. RYDE: be-tyde: ‘happened’, see 253. ii. BE-TYDDE for the etymology and 487. TYDE for the phonological development; ryde: ‘ride’, see 753. RYDE for the etymology and the phonological development of the verb. The rhyming vowel is /i:/ as in 13. ii. FER AND WYDE / 14. SYDE.

971. i. A-ȳAYN: ‘towards’, see 203. i. AȳEYN above for the etymology.

700 OED, win, v.1, 7.e..
701 OED, inn, n., 4.a.,
702 OED, lording, n.1, 1.
973. 3YNGE / 974. KOMYNGE: ȝyngē: ‘young’, see 41. ȝYNGE above; komynge: ‘coming, arrival’, see 962. KOMYNG above. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. òYN / 41. òYNGE.

975. DONE / 978. SONE: done: ‘do’, see 4. iii. TO DONE above; sone: ‘son’, for the etymology and the vowel development, see 158. ii. SONNE. The rhyming vowel is /oː/ as in 4. iii. TO DONE / 5. iii. WONE.

981. i. A-BOVE: ‘bow down’, <OE abugan – abeah – abugon – abogen, strong verb of the 2nd class.703

981. ii. SONE / 984. DOME: sone: ‘immediately’, see 97. SONE above; dome: ‘condemnation, sentence of punishment’, <OE dom. The vowel developed as the one in 4. iii. TO DONE. The rhyming vowel is /oː/ as in 4. iii. TO DONE / 5. iii. WONE.704

992. i. VALED: ‘doffed, took off’, <OF valer, aphetic form of avale ‘to the valley’.705

993. TYDE / 996. IN HERTE IS NOT TO HYDE: tyde: ‘time’, see 487. TYDE for the etymology and the phonological development; in herte is not to hyde: ‘that is the truth of it’, see 120. IN HERTE IS NOT TO HYDE for the etymology and the vowel development. The rhyming vowel is /iː/ as in 487. TYDE / 488. ii. SYDE.

994. VALOWRE / 995. SEGRAMOWRE: valowre: ‘worthiness’, <OF valour. The word entered ME with stress shift from the second syllable to /a/. In the

703 OED, † abow, v., 1.b..
704 OED, doom, n., 2..
705 OED, vail, v.², l.2.a..
passage to EModE it was slightly raised to /æ/\(^{706}\); Segramowre: another spelling for the name given to the King of Galicia and Emare’s son. The rhyming vowel is /u:/ as in 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE.

997. GRETLYE / 998. BY: gretlye: ‘very much’, for the etymology, see 217. GRETE; by: ‘next to’, for the etymology see 159. BY above. The rhyming vowel is /i/ as in 286. PER-BY / 287. HASTYLY.

999. CHERE / 1002. WERE: chere: ‘face’, see 214. CHERE above for the etymology and the phonological development\(^{707}\); were: ‘were’, for the etymology and the phonological development see 182. WER. The rhyming vowel is /ɛ:/ as in 181.

1000. i. S[T]AYDE: ‘stop, arrest’, now obs., <OF (e)stai-, (e)stei- from the inflectional system of ester ‘to stand’.\(^{708}\)

1000. ii. STEDE / 1001. HEDE: stede: ‘steed, stallion’, see 210. STEDE; hede: ‘careful attention’. As there is no corresponding OE noun, apparently <OE hedan v. ‘to take charge or possession, to take’. The vowel developed as the one in 7. ii. QWENE. The rhyming vowel here is /e:/ as in 250. UNPER WEDE / 251. GOD OF HEUEN HYT FOR-BEDE.\(^{709}\)

1005. HERE / 1008. DERE: here: ‘here’, see 297. ii. HERE above; dere: ‘dear’, see 291. DERE. The rhyming vowel is /e:/ as in 127. ii. SAFERE / 128. CLERE above.

\(^{706}\) OED, Valour | Valor, n., 1.†b.. WELNA, J., (1978); pp. 111-112, 213.
\(^{707}\) OED, cheer, n., †1.
\(^{708}\) OED, stay, v., †1. III.20.a..
\(^{709}\) OED, heed, n., 1.b..
1009. PALE / 1010. BALE: pale: ‘whitish, pallid’, <Anglo-Norman paille, pal, pale, palle. The vowel development is discussed in 758. BLAME above\textsuperscript{710}, bale: ‘evil’, <OE balu, bealu. The vowel development is discussed in 27. NOME. The rhyming vowel is /a:/ as in 367. CAME / 368. NAM.\textsuperscript{711}

1011. BOTE / 1014. LOKE: ‘remedy’, <OE bot, feminine noun. The phonological development of the vowel is discussed in 268. BOOT\textsuperscript{712}; loke: ‘look’, <OE locian – locode – gelocod, weak verb of the 2\textsuperscript{nd} class. LOE /o:/ did not undergo any changes when entering EME. The vowel reached the level of /ʊ/—its current realisation—in LModE, through the intermediate passage of LME /u:/, which, in a +/k,t,d,m/ context, was shortened and slightly fronted and delabialised. The rhyming vowel is /o:/.

1017. FOTE / 1020. SOTE: fote: ‘feet’, for the etymology and the vowel development, see 211. FETE above; sote: ‘sweetly’, see 212. ii. SWETE. The rhyming vowel is /o:/ as in 1011. BOTE / 1014. LOKE.

1018. ϵO / 1019. TWO: bo: ‘then, at that time’, see 51. ϵOO above; two: ‘two’, see 203. ii. TWO above. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 51. ϵOO / 54. GOO.

1021. METYNGE / 1022. KYNGE: metyng: ‘meeting’, <OE metan – mette – gemeted, weak verb of the 1\textsuperscript{st} class\textsuperscript{714}; kynge: ‘king’, for the etymology and the vowel development, see 1. iii. KYNG. The rhyming vowel is /ɪ/ as in 40. ϵYNG / 41. ʒYNGE.

\textsuperscript{710} OED, pale, adj., 1.a.
\textsuperscript{711} OED, bale, n., 1.f.a.
\textsuperscript{712} OED, boot, n., 1.7.a.
\textsuperscript{714} OED, meeting, n., 1.a.
1023. EMARE / 1026. HE: Emare: the proper name of the main character; he: ‘he’, see 342. HE above. The rhyming vowel is /e:/.

1024. [S]EGRAMOUR / 1025. EMPEROUR: [S]egramour: the name of the King of Galicia and Emare’s son; emperour: ‘emperour’, for the etymology and the vowel development, see 25. ii. EMPEROUR. For the rhyming vowel, see 25. ii. EMPEROUR / 26. ii. TOWRE.

1027. HOLDE / 1028. BOLDE: holde: ‘held’, <OE haldan – heold – heoldon – halden, strong verb of the 7th class. For the etymology and the vowel development see 249. BE-HOLDE715; bolde: ‘courageous’, see 408. BOLDE. The rhyming vowel is /ɔ:/ as in 399. HADDE YN WOLDE / 402. BE-HOLDE.

1029. STORY / 1032. PLAYN þE GARYE / 1035. GLORYE: story: ‘story’, see 162. STORY; þe garye: Rickert suggests that the correct spelling would be either “playn[t] þE-garye”, meaning “the complaint of Egare” or “lay þE-garye”, “the lay of Egare”; glorye: ‘worship’, <OF glorie. The rhyming vowel is /i:/716.

1030. LAYES / 1031. DAYES: layes: ‘lays, sung poems’, <OF lai, of uncertain etymology. The most satisfactory hyphotesis is that the word comes from Old High or Middle High German leich ‘play, melody’ and phonetically from Old Norse lag ‘tune’ (see 295. ii. LAY)717; dayes: ‘days’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 192. ii. DAY. The rhyming diphthong is /ai/ as in 189. MAY / 192. ii. DAY.

715 OED, hold, v., II.27..
716 OED, glory, n., 4.c.. See § 1.1.3..
717 OED, lay, n.4, 1.a.
1033. TRONE / 1034. W[O]NE: trone: ‘throne’, for the etymology and the phonological development, see 1. iv. TRONE above; won: ‘live, dwell’, see 5. iii. WONE. The rhyming vowel is /o:/ as in 1. iv. TRONE / 2. MONE.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

Primary sources


Secondary sources


The book collects essays on the subject. The essay by Donovan is an analysis of the role of the cloth in *Emaré*.


The volume provides an analysis of the language of the romance. In the introduction the author delineates the features of the Constance Saga.

The book continues Gough’s previous research on the Constance Saga contained in the volume mentioned above and adds a more detailed analysis of the relations between the original and the versions of the saga derived from it.


In the introduction to *Emaré* Hibbard briefly illustrates its themes and compares it with other versions of the Constance Saga.


The book collects essays on the subject. Hopkins’ essay focuses on the various interpretations given from scholars to *Emaré*’s cloth.


This is a critical edition of the *Libeaus Desconus*, one of the poems written in the same rhyme pattern of *Emaré*.


A collection of essays on English, French, Spanish and German philology and literature. The essay by Rickert analyses in depth the connections of the saga with previous and later works.
Middle English anthologies and general studies


The fifth chapter provides an outline of the origin and general features of the romance and of the Breton lay.


Part two provides an analysis of medieval English verse and drama. Metrical romances are discussed focusing in particular on their recurring themes and on their oral character.


This anthology is provided with a general and concise introduction on the metrical romances, the main features of Middle English and life in the Middle Ages. The text of *Emaré* can be found in vol. 1.


A catalogue of the MSS contained in the collection with a concise introduction to its story.

The book contains the text of *Emaré* and an introduction where the author briefly outlines the main features of the romances collected and discusses the issue of transmission of medieval works.

**RUMBLE, T. C.** (ed.), *The Breton Lays in Middle English*, Detroit, Wayne State University Press, 1965.

The anthology contains the text of *Emaré* and an introduction where the Breton lay and the romance are outlined. The crucial influence of French literature in the Middle English romance production is underlined.


The book contains a chapter analysing the connections and origins of the Tristan saga.


In chapter 6, Rosemary Woolf analyses literary themes and forms in poetry of the late Middle Ages.


The book contains a short outline of the non-Arthurian romance in the Matter of England. The Breton lay is described in function of the hints contained in *Sir Orfeo* and *The Franklin’s Tale*. 
Handbooks


Dictionaries


MED online version

OED online version


Ringraziamenti

“Ogni dipinto porta una firma. Quella sul dipinto più sublime e quella del più incerto hanno nonostante tutto qualcosa in comune: un sottile gioco di pensieri, persone e situazioni che sfuma il nome dell’autore, in modo a volte impercettibile ma sempre unico”.

(D. L. B.)

Non posso di certo non riservare una posizione d’onore a chi ha sempre dato il proprio incondizionato assenso a tutte le mie scelte universitarie, dalla mia immatricolazione al Lasc nel 2007 e ad Anglistica nel 2010, alla partenza per la mia esperienza di tirocinio Erasmus a Londra, per arrivare alla laurea, il giorno in cui questo percorso si completa. Se sono arrivata fino a qui è in buona parte anche grazie ai miei genitori, che in questi anni mi hanno silenziosamente supportato (e sopportato).

Vorrei poi ringraziare la Professoressa Cattaneo, che con la sua pacatezza e compostezza mi ha saputo rassicurare in quei giorni in cui presa dallo sconforto, questa tesi mi sembrava un’impresa senza fine e che mi ha seguito con costanza e dedizione nei mesi di stesura. Con lei inoltre condivido una sorta di passione “protettiva” per la lingua italiana e per l’inglese, e conserverò sempre con affetto il ricordo delle nostre chiacchierate su doppiaggi più o meno azzeccati.

La mia scorta di autostima l’ho trovata quotidianamente in Hans, la mia metà ed il mio migliore amico, che crede in me più di quanto io stessa a volte riesca e che ha vissuto la scrittura della mia tesi quasi come se fosse la sua, sia riportandomi razionalmente all’ordine quando necessario, sia restituendomi il buonumore ogniqualvolta la stanchezza prendeva il sopravvento e strappandomi sorrisi in tipico stile hd.

Insieme a loro, non dimentico le mie amiche di sempre, le vecchie e le nuove intese, i colleghi di avventure accademiche, gli amici emigrati, la mia famiglia e chi ha un buon motivo per ricevere il mio Grazie: credo che dentro di sé ognuno
sappia dove trova spazio il proprio nome in questo elenco essenziale ma non meno importante del resto.

Aggiungo un consueto pizzico di leggerezza ringraziando anche: Spinoza, il 2, il 1453, Gregartù, Damon, John Bleasdale ed il suo puntuale “Hi Laura!”, la mia bicicletta.

Sarei ingiusta infine a non ringraziare anche me stessa: infatti, senza l’incessante movimento delle mie dita sulla tastiera non sarei arrivata neanche alla fine di questa facciata.